Yf. coll. 52 m
C7

Starkhall

<366393995800 11

<366393995800 11

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek

H.coll 52 m 17

HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF THE MOST CELEBRATED

VOYAGES,

TRAVELS, AND DISCOVERIES,

FROM THE

TIME OF COLUMBUS

TO THE

PRESENT PERIOD.

"Non apis inde tulit *collectos* sedula *flores*." *Ovid.*

By WILLIAM MAVOR, LL.D.

VOL. VII.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR E. NEWBERY,

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD.

1796.

W5167 18

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

CONTENTS OF VOL. VII.

THIRD Voyage of Captain James Cook, for making Discoveries in the Northern Hemisphere, - - - - - Page 1

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

THIRD VOYAGE

OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK,

FOR MAKING DISCOVERIES

IN THE

NORTHERN HEMISPHERE.

IN the preceding voyage, the queſtion reſpecting the exiſtence of a ſouthern continent was fully determined; but the practicability of a northern paſſage to the Pacific Ocean was ſtill an object of ſufficient importance to excite a ſpirit of inveſtigation.

It had long been a favourite ſcheme with the moſt celebrated navigators, to diſcover a ſhorter and more commodious courſe to the oriental regions, than by the Cape of Good Hope. This had been attempted, as has been ſeen in the former volumes of this work, in various directions; but the completion of this favourite object was as diſtant as ever.

To ſettle this point too, of ſo much importance to navigation and geography, was reſerved for the glory of the preſent reign. For the conduct of ſuch an enterpriſe, it was evident, that

great ſkill and abilities were requiſite; and though, by the univerſal voice of mankind, Captain Cook was the beſt qualified, no one could preſume to ſolicit him on the ſubject. The ſervices he had already rendered to his country, the labours he had ſuſtained, and the dangers he had encountered, were ſo many and ſo various, that it was deemed not reaſonable to deſire him to engage in freſh perils.

As an honourable teſtimony, however, to his merit and knowledge, it was reſolved to aſk his advice reſpecting the moſt proper perſon to be entruſted with the conduct of this voyage; and to determine this point, ſome of the moſt diſtinguiſhed naval characters were invited to meet Captain Cook at the houſe of Lord Sandwich, who then preſided over the Board of Admiralty.

While the converſation became animated on the ſubject, Cook's mind was fired with the magnitude of the deſign, and the conſequences likely to reſult from it. He ſuddenly ſtarted up, under the impreſſion of a noble enthuſiaſm, and offered his beſt ſervices to direct the important objects in view. No propoſal could have been more grateful. Captain Cook was immediately inveſted with the command.

This preliminary ſtep ſettled, the exact plan of the undertaking was next taken into ſerious conſideration. All former navigators round the globe had returned by the Cape of Good Hope; but to Captain Cook was aſſigned the arduous taſk of attempting the ſame thing by reaching the high northern latitudes between Aſia and America; and it appears, that this plan was adopted in conſequence of his own ſuggeſtions.

His

His inſtructions were, to proceed on the Pacific Ocean through that cluſter of iſlands he had before viſited within the ſouthern tropic, and thence, if practicable, to make his way into the Atlantic.

To give every ſtimulus to the proſecution of this great deſign, motives of intereſt were ſuperadded to the obligations of duty. An act of parliament, which paſſed in 1745, offering a reward of twenty thouſand pounds to ſuch as ſhould diſcover a paſſage through Hudſon's Bay, was enlarged and explained; and it was now enacted, that if any ſhip belonging to his majeſty, or his ſubjects, ſhould find and ſail through any paſſage, by ſea, between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, in any direction, or parallel, of the northern hemiſphere to the northward of the 52d deg. of northern latitude, the ſum of twenty thouſand pounds was to reward ſuch diſcovery.

The veſſels deſtined for this ſervice were the Reſolution and the Diſcovery. The command of the former was given to Captain Cook, and that of the latter to Captain Clerke, who had been our navigator's ſecond lieutenant in his former voyage. Nearly the ſame complement of men and officers was aſſigned to each as before; and ſeveral months were ſpent in their equipment and preparation, that the health of the ſeamen, and the ſucceſs of the expedition might have every advantage which a liberal and enlightened attention could beſtow. And in order that the inhabitants of Otaheite, and other iſlands in the South Seas, where the Engliſh had been treated with ſo much hoſpitality, might be benefited by the voyage, his majeſty was graciouſly pleaſed to order ſome of the moſt uſeful Euro-

pean animals to be put on board, for the uſe of thoſe countries.

Beſides theſe, the captain was furniſhed with a quantity of garden ſeeds, and the Board of Admiralty added ſuch articles of commerce as were moſt likely to promote a friendly intercourſe with the natives of the other hemiſphere, and induce them to open a traffic with the Engliſh.

Omai, who has been mentioned in the preceding voyage, was likewiſe to be carried back to his native country. It ſeems he left his friends in London with a mixture of regret and ſatisfaction. When he reflected on the kindneſſes he had received, he could not refrain from tears: but the pleaſing idea of reviſiting his original connections, ſoon made his eyes ſparkle with joy.

As the original voyage, from which our hiſtorical account is abſtracted, is written in the words of Captain Cook, till his lamented death, and afterwards in thoſe of Captain King, who publiſhed the whole, we have, for many ſtrong reaſons, preferred giving the narrative in the ſame perſon, with occaſional remarks; and we truſt our readers will ſee the propriety and advantage of our determination in this reſpect. Some general deſcriptions are furniſhed by Mr. Anderſon, the ſurgeon of the Reſolution, a man of diſtinguiſhed abilities; and to whoſe talents Captain Cook acknowledges himſelf much indebted for many intereſting parts of his voyage.

Contrary winds, and other circumſtances of little conſequence, prevented the ſhips from clearing the Channel till the 14th of July 1776. On board both veſſels were one hundred and ninety-two perſons, officers included. Nothing material

happened

happened till the 1ſt of Auguſt, when we arrived off Teneriffe, one of the Canaries, where ſeveral of the gentlemen landed. It is ſaid, that none of the aboriginal inhabitants remain here as a diſtinct people; but that the produce of their intermarriages with the Spaniards may ſtill be traced in a ſtrong and muſcular race, diſperſed over the iſlands.

On the 4th, we weighed anchor and proceeded on our voyage. At nine o'clock in the evening of the 10th, we ſaw the Iſland of Bonaviſta, bearing ſouth, diſtant little more than a league; though, at this time, we thought ourſelves much farther off; but this proved a miſtake. For, after hauling to the eaſtward till twelve o'clock, to clear the ſunken rocks that lie about a league from the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, we found ourſelves, at that time, cloſe upon them, and did but juſt weather the breakers. Our ſituation, for a few minutes, was very alarming. I did not chuſe to ſound, as that might have heightened the danger, without any poſſibility of leſſening it.

We had, for ſome days preceding the 6th of October, ſeen albatroſſes, pintadoes, and other peterels; and now we ſaw three penguins, which occaſioned us to ſound; but we found no ground with a line of one hundred and fifty fathoms.

On the 8th, in the evening, one of thoſe birds, which ſailors call noddies, ſettled on our rigging, and was caught. It was ſomething larger than an Engliſh blackbird, and nearly as black, except the upper part of the head, which was white, looking as if it were powdered; the whiteſt feathers growing out from the baſe of the upper bill, from which they gradually aſſumed a darker

colour, to about the middle of the upper part of the neck, where the white ſhade was loſt in the black, without being divided by any line. It was web-footed, had black legs, and a long black bill. It is ſaid, theſe birds never fly far from land. We knew of none nearer the ſtation we were in, than Gough's or Richmond's Iſland, from which our diſtance could not be leſs than one hundred leagues. But it muſt be obſerved, that the Atlantic Ocean, to the ſouthward of this latitude, has been but little frequented; ſo that there may be more iſlands there than we are acquainted with.

On the 18th of October, we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, and found in the bay two French Eaſt India ſhips; the one outward, and the other homeward bound. And two or three days before our arrival, another homeward bound ſhip, of the ſame nation, had parted from her cable, and been driven on ſhore at the head of the bay, where ſhe was loſt. The crew were ſaved; but the greateſt part of the cargo ſhared the ſame fate with the ſhip, or was plundered and ſtolen by the inhabitants. This is the account the French officers gave me; and the Dutch themſelves could not deny the facts. But, by way of excuſing themſelves from being guilty of a crime diſgraceful to every civilized ſtate, they endeavoured to lay the whole blame on the French captain, for not applying in time for a guard.

As ſoon as we had ſaluted, I went on ſhore, accompanied by ſome of my officers, and waited on the governor, the lieutenant governor, the fiſcal, and the commander of the troops. Theſe gentlemen received me with the greateſt civility; and

the governor, in particular, promiſed me every aſſiſtance that the place afforded. At the ſame time, I obtained his leave to ſet up our obſervatory; to pitch tents for the ſailmakers and coopers; and to bring the cattle on ſhore, to graze near our encampment. Before I returned on board, I ordered ſoft bread, freſh meat, and greens, to be provided, every day, for the ſhip's company.

Nothing remarkable happened till the evening of the 31ſt, when it began to blow exceſſively hard at ſouth-eaſt, and continued for three days; during which time there was no communication between the ſhip and the ſhore. The Reſolution was the only ſhip in the bay that rode out the gale without dragging her anchors. We felt its effects as ſenſibly on ſhore. Our tents and obſervatory were torn to pieces; and our aſtronomical quadrant narrowly eſcaped irreparable damage. On the 3d of November the ſtorm ceaſed.

The Diſcovery having been detained ſome days at Plymouth, after the Reſolution, did not arrive here till the 10th. Captain Clerke informed me, that he had ſailed from Plymouth on the 1ſt of Auguſt, and ſhould have been with us here a week ſooner, if the late gale of wind had not blown him off the coaſt. Upon the whole, he was ſeven days longer in his paſſage from England than we had been. He had the misfortune to loſe one of his marines, by falling overboard; but there had been no other mortality amongſt his people, and they now arrived well and healthy.

While the ſhips were getting ready, ſome of our officers made an excurſion into the neighbouring country. Mr. Anderſon, my ſurgeon, who was

one

one of the party, gave me the following relation of their proceedings:

"On the 16th, in the forenoon, I set out in a waggon, with five more, to take a view of some part of the country. We crossed the large plain that lies to the eastward of the town, which is entirely a white sand, like that commonly found on beaches, and produces only heath, and other small plants of various sorts. At five in the afternoon we passed a large farm-house, with some corn-fields, and pretty considerable vineyards, situated beyond the plain, near the foot of some low hills, where the soil becomes worth cultivating. Between six and seven we arrived at Stellenbosh, the colony next to that of the Cape for its importance.

The village does not consist of more than thirty houses, and stands at the foot of the range of lofty mountains, above twenty miles to the eastward of the Cape Town. The houses are neat; and, with the advantage of a rivulet which runs near, and the shelter of some large oaks, planted at its first settling, forms a rural prospect in this desert country. There are some vineyards and orchards, which, from their thriving appearance, indicate an excellent soil; though, perhaps, they owe much to climate, as the air has an uncommon serenity.

I employed the next day in searching for plants and insects, but had little success. Few plants are in flower here at this season, and insects but scarce. I examined the soil in several places, and found it to consist of yellowish clay, mixed with a good deal of sand.

We left Stellenbosh next morning, and arrived at the house we had passed on Saturday; the

owner

owner, Mr. Cloeder, had ſent us an invitation to viſit him. This gentleman entertained us with the greateſt hoſpitality. He received us with muſic, and a band alſo played while we were at dinner; which, conſidering the ſituation of the place, might be reckoned elegant. He ſhewed us his wine-cellars, orchards, and vineyards; all which inſpired me with a wiſh, to know how theſe induſtrious people could create ſuch plenty, where, I believe, no other European nation would have attempted to ſettle.

In the afternoon we croſſed the country, and paſſed a few plantations, one of which ſeemed very conſiderable, and was laid out in a taſte ſomewhat different from any other we ſaw. In the evening we arrived at a farm-houſe, which is the firſt in the cultivated tract called the Pearl. We had, at the ſame time, a view of Drakenſtein, the third colony, which lies by the foot of the lofty hills already mentioned, and contains ſeveral farms or plantations, not very extenſive.

In the afternoon of the 19th, we went to ſee a ſtone of a remarkable ſize, called by the inhabitants the Tower of Babylon, or the Pearl Diamond. It ſtands upon the top of ſome low hills; and though the road to it is neither very ſteep nor rugged, we were above an hour and a half in walking to it. It is of an oblong ſhape, rounded on the top, and lies nearly ſouth and north. The eaſt and weſt ſides are ſteep, and almoſt perpendicular. The ſouth end is likewiſe ſteep, and its greateſt height is there; whence it declines gently to the north part, by which we aſcended to its top, and had an extenſive view of the country.

Its

Its circumference, I think, muſt be at leaſt half a mile; as it took us above half an hour to walk round it, including every allowance for the bad road, and ſtopping a little. At its higheſt part, which is the ſouth end, it ſeems to equal the dome of St. Paul's church. In deſcending, we found at its foot, a very rich black mould; and on the ſides of the hills, ſome trees of a conſiderable ſize, natives of the place, which are a ſpecies of olea.

In the morning on the 20th, we ſet out from the Pearl; and going a different road from that by which we came, paſſed through a country wholly uncultivated, till we got to the Tyger Hills, when ſome tolerable corn fields appeared. At noon, we ſtopped in a hollow for refreſhment; but, in walking about here, were plagued with a vaſt number of moſquitoes or ſand-flies, which were the firſt I ſaw in the country."

Here I added to my original ſtock of live animals, by purchaſing two young bulls, two heifers, two young ſtone horſes, two mares, two rams, ſeveral ewes and goats, and ſome rabbits and poultry. All of them were intended for New Zealand, Otaheite, and the neigbbouring iſlands, or any other places, in the courſe of our voyage, where there might be a proſpect that leaving any of them would be uſeful to poſterity.

Having given Captain Clerke a copy of my inſtructions, and an order directing him how to proceed in caſe of ſeparation, in the morning of the 30th, we repaired on board. At five in the afternoon we weighed, and ſtood out of the bay.

We ſteered a ſouth-eaſt courſe, with a very ſtrong gale from the weſtward, followed by a mountainous ſea, which made the ſhip roll and

tumble

tumble exceedingly, and gave us a great deal of trouble to preſerve the cattle we had on board. Notwithſtanding all our care, ſeveral goats, eſpecially the males, died; and ſome ſheep. This misfortune, was, in a great meaſure, owing to the cold, which we now began moſt ſenſibly to feel.

Nothing very intereſting happened from the 5th of December, till the 26th of January, when they arrived at Van Diemen's Land; where, as ſoon as they had anchored in Adventure Bay, Captain Cook ſays, I ordered the boats to be hoiſted out. In one of them I went myſelf, to look for the moſt commodious place for furniſhing ourſelves with the neceſſary ſupplies; and Captain Clerke went in his boat upon the ſame ſervice.

Next morning early, I ſent Lieutenant King to the eaſt ſide of the bay, with two parties, one to cut wood and the other graſs, under the protection of the marines. For although, as yet, none of the natives had appeared, there could be no doubt that ſome were in our neighbourhood: I alſo ſent the launch for water; and afterwards viſited all the parties myſelf. In the evening, we drew the ſeine at the head of the bay, and, at one haul, caught a great quantity of fiſh. Moſt of them were of that ſort known to ſeamen by the name of elephant fiſh.

In the afternoon, next day, we were agreeably ſurpriſed, at the place where we were cutting wood, with a viſit from ſome of the natives; eight men and a boy. They approached us from the woods, without betraying any marks of fear, for none of them had any weapons except one,

who

who held in his hand a ſtick about two feet long, and pointed at one end.

They were of common ſtature, but rather ſlender. Their ſkin was black, and alſo their hair, which was as woolly as that of any native of Guinea; but they were not diſtinguiſhed by remarkably thick lips, nor flat noſes. On the contrary, their features were far from being diſagreeable. Moſt of them had their hair and beards ſmeared with a red ointment; and ſome had their faces alſo painted with the ſame compoſition.

They received every preſent we made to them without the leaſt appearance of ſatisfaction. When ſome bread was given, as ſoon as they underſtood that it was to be eaten, they either returned it or threw it away, without even taſting it. They alſo refuſed ſome elephant fiſh, both raw and dreſſed, which we offered to them. But upon giving them ſome birds, they did not return theſe, and eaſily made us comprehend that they were fond of ſuch food. I had brought two pigs aſhore, with a view to leave them in the woods. The inſtant theſe came within their reach, they ſeized them as a dog would have done, by the ears, and were for carrying them off immediately, with no other intention, as we could perceive, but to kill them.

Being deſirous of knowing the uſe of the ſtick which one of our viſiters carried in his hand, I made ſigns to them to ſhew me; and ſo far ſucceeded, that one of them ſet up a piece of wood as a mark, and threw at it, at the diſtance of about twenty yards. But we had little reaſon to commend his dexterity; for, after repeated trials, he was ſtill very wide from the object. Omai,

to ſhew them how much ſuperior our weapons were to theirs, then fired his muſket at it; which alarmed them ſo much, that notwithſtanding all we could do or ſay, they ran inſtantly into the woods.

Thus ended our firſt interview with the natives. Immediately after their final retreat, I ordered the two pigs, being a boar and a ſow, to be carried about a mile within the woods, at the head of the bay. I ſaw them left there, by the ſide of a freſh water brook. A young bull and a cow, and ſome ſheep and goats, were alſo, at firſt, intended to have been left by me, as an additional preſent to Van Diemen's Land. But I ſoon laid aſide all thought of this, from a perſuaſion that the natives, incapable of entering into my views of improving their country, would deſtroy them.

The morning of the 29th we had a dead calm, which continued all day, and effectually prevented our ſailing. I therefore ſent a party over to the eaſt point of the bay to cut graſs, and another to cut wood. I accompanied the latter. We had obſerved ſeveral of the natives, this morning, ſauntering along the ſhore, which aſſured us, that though their conſternation had made them leave us ſo abruptly the day before, they were convinced that we intended them no miſchief, and were deſirous of renewing the intercourſe. It was natural that I ſhould wiſh to be preſent on the occaſion.

We had not been long landed, before about twenty of them, men and boys, joined us, without expreſſing the leaſt ſign of fear and diſtruſt. There was one of this company conſpicuouſly deformed; and who was not more diſtinguiſhable

by the hump on his bank, than by the drollery of his geſtures, and the ſeeming humour of his ſpeeches; which he was very fond of exhibiting, as we ſuppoſed, for our entertainment. His language appeared to me, to be different from that ſpoken by the inhabitants of the more northern parts of this country, whom I met with in my firſt voyage; which is not extraordinary, ſince thoſe we now ſaw, and thoſe we then viſited, differ in many other reſpects.

Some of our preſent group wore, looſe, round their necks, three or four folds of ſmall cord, made of the fur of ſome animal; and others of them had a narrow ſlip of the kangooroo ſkin tied round their ankles. I gave to each of them a ſtring of beads and a medal, which I thought they received with ſome ſatisfaction. They ſeemed to ſet no value on iron, or on iron tools. They were even ignorant of the uſe of fiſh-hooks, if we might judge from their manner of looking at ſome of ours, which we ſhewed to them; though it is certain they derive no inconſiderable part of their ſubſiſtence from the ſea. We ſaw, however, no veſſel in which they could go on the water. Their habitations were little ſheds or hovels built of ſticks, and covered with bark.

After ſtaying about an hour with the wooding party and the natives, I went over to the graſs-cutters. Having ſeen the boats loaded, I returned on board to dinner; where, ſome time after, Lieutenant King arrived.

From him I learnt, that I had but juſt left the ſhore, when ſeveral women and children made their appearance. Theſe females wore a kangooroo ſkin tied over the ſhoulders, and round the waiſt. But its only uſe ſeemed to be, to ſup-

port their children when carried on their backs; for it did not cover thoſe parts which moſt nations conceal; being in all other reſpects, as naked as the men, and as black, and their bodies tatooed in the ſame manner. But in this they differed from the men, that though their hair was of the ſame colour, ſome of them had their heads completely ſhorn; in others this operation had been performed only on one ſide, while the reſt of them had all the upper part of the head ſhorn cloſe, leaving a circle of hair all round, ſomewhat like the tonſure of the Romiſh eccleſiaſtics. Many of the children had fine features, and were thought pretty; but of the perſons of the women, eſpecially thoſe advanced in years, a leſs favourable report was made.

Mr. Anderſon, with his uſual diligence, ſpent the few days we remained in Adventure Bay, in examining the country. His account of its natural productions, with which he favoured me, will more than compenſate for my ſilence about them: and ſome of his remarks on the inhabitants, will ſupply what I may have omitted or repreſented imperfectly.

The only animal of the quadruped kind we got, was a ſort of opoſſum, about twice the ſize of a large rat. It is of a duſky colour above, tinged with a brown or ruſty caſt, and whitiſh below. About a third of the tail towards its tip, is white, and bare underneath, by which it probably hangs on the branches of trees, as it climbs theſe, and lives on berries. The kangooroo, another animal found farther northward in New Holland, without doubt alſo inhabits here, as the natives we met with had ſome pieces of their ſkins; and we ſeveral times

ſaw animal, though indiſtinctly, run from the thickets when we walked in the woods, which, from the ſize, could be no other.

There are ſeveral ſorts of birds, but all ſo ſcarce and ſhy, that they are evidently haraſſed by the natives, who, perhaps draw much of their ſubſiſtence from them. In the woods, the principal ſorts are large brown hawks or eagles; crows, nearly the ſame as ours in England; yellowiſh parroquets; and large pigeons. There are alſo three or four ſmall birds, one of which is of the thruſh kind. On the ſhore were ſeveral common and ſea-gulls; a few black oyſter-catchers, or ſea-pies; and a pretty plover of a ſtone colour, with a black hood. About the lake, behind the beach, a few wild ducks were ſeen; and ſome ſhags uſed to perch upon the high leafleſs trees, near the ſhore.

The ſea affords a much greater plenty, and at leaſt as great a variety as the land. Of theſe the elephant fiſh, or pejegallo, mentioned in Frezier's Voyage, are the moſt numerous; and though inferior to many other fiſh, were very palatable food. Next in number, and ſuperior in goodneſs, to the elephant fiſh, was a ſort, none of us recollected to have ſeen before. It partakes of the nature both of a round and of a flat fiſh, having the eyes placed very near each other; the fore part of the body very much flattened or depreſſed, and the reſt rounded. It is of a brownish ſandy colour, with ruſty ſpots on the upper part, and below. From the quantity of ſlime it was always covered with, it ſeems to live after the manner of flat fiſh, at the bottom.

Upon the rocks are plenty of muſcles, and ſome other ſmall ſhell-fiſh. There are alſo great num-

bers

bers of ſea-ſtars; ſome ſmall limpets; and large quantities of ſponge; one ſort of which, that is thrown on ſhore by the ſea, but not very common, has a moſt delicate texture.

Inſects, though not numerous, are here in conſiderable variety. Among them are graſshoppers, butterflies, and ſeveral ſorts of ſmall moths, finely variegated. There are two ſorts of dragon-flies, gad-flies, camel-flies, ſeveral ſorts of ſpiders; and ſome ſcorpions; but the laſt are rather rare. The moſt troubleſome, though not very numerous tribe of inſects, are the moſquitoes; and a large black ant, the pain of whoſe bite is almoſt intolerable, during the ſhort time it laſts.

The inhabitants, whom we met with here, had little of that fierce or wild appearance common to people in their ſituation; but, on the contrary, ſeemed mild and cheerful, without reſerve or jealouſy of ſtrangers. This, however, may ariſe from their having little to loſe or care for.

With reſpect to perſonal activity or genius, we can ſay but little of either. They do not ſeem to poſſeſs the firſt in any remarkable degree; and as for the laſt, they have, to appearance, leſs than even the half animated inhabitants of Terra del Fuego, who have not invention ſufficient to make clothing for defending themſelves from the rigour of their climate, though furniſhed with the materials.

Their colour is a dull black, and not quite ſo deep as that of the African negroes. Their hair, however, is perfectly woolly, and it is clotted or divided into ſmall parcels, like that of the Hottentots, with the uſe of ſome ſort of greaſe, mixed with a red paint or ochre, which they ſmear

in great abundance over their heads. Their noſes, though not flat, are broad and full; their eyes are of a middling ſize, with the white leſs clear than in us; and though not remarkably quick or piercing, ſuch as give a frank cheerful caſt to the whole countenance. Their mouths are rather wide; but this appearance ſeems heightened by wearing their beards long, and clotted with paint, in the ſame manner as the hair on their heads.

A ſpecimen of Van Diemen's Land vocabulary.

Quadne,	A woman.
Eve'rai,	The eye.
Muidje,	The noſe.
Ka'my,	The teeth, mouth, or tongue.
Koy'gee,	The ear.
No'onga,	Elevated ſcars on the body.
Teegera,	To eat.
Toga'rago,	I muſt be gone, or, I will go.

At eight o'clock in the morning of the 30th of January, a light breeze ſpringing up at weſt, we weighed anchor, and put to ſea from Adventure Bay.

We purſued our courſe to the eaſtward, without meeting with any thing worthy of note, till the night between the 6th and 7th of February, when a marine belonging to the Diſcovery fell overboard, and was never ſeen afterward.

On the 16th of February, at four in the afternoon, we diſcovered the land of New Zealand; and ſoon after came to an anchor in Queen Charlotte Sound. Here ſeveral canoes, filled with natives, came along-ſide of the ſhips; but very few of them would venture on board; which appeared the more extraordinary, as I was well

known

known by them all. There was one man in particular amongſt them, whom I had treated with remarkable kindneſs, during the whole of my ſtay when I was laſt here. Yet now, neither profeſſions of friendſhip, nor preſents, could prevail upon him to come into the ſhip. This ſhyneſs was to be accounted for, only on this ſuppoſition, that they were apprehenſive we had reviſited their country, in order to revenge the death of Captain Furneaux's people.

On the 13th we ſet up two tents, one from each ſhip, on the ſame ſpot where we had pitched them formerly. The obſervatories were at the ſame time erected; and Meſſrs. King and Bayley began their operations immediately.

During the courſe of this day a great number of families came from different parts of the coaſt, and took up their reſidence cloſe to us; ſo that there was not a ſpot in the cove where a hut could be put up, that was not occupied by them, except the place where we had fixed our little encampment.

It is curious to obſerve with what facility they build their little huts. I have ſeen above twenty of them erected on a ſpot of ground, that, not an hour before, was covered with ſhrubs and plants. They generally bring ſome part of the materials with them, the reſt they find upon the premiſes. I was preſent when a number of people landed, and built one of theſe villages.

Beſides the natives who took up their abode cloſe to us, we were occaſionally viſited by others of them, whoſe reſidence was not afar off; and by ſome who lived more remote. Their articles of commerce were, curioſities, fiſh, and women. The two firſt always came to a good market; which

which the latter did not. The ſeamen had taken a kind of diſlike to theſe people; and were either unwilling, or afraid, to aſſociate with them; which produced this good effect, that I knew no inſtance of a man's quitting his ſtation to go to their habitations.

Amongſt our occaſional viſiters, was a chief named Kahoora, who, as I was informed, headed the party that cut off Captain Furneaux's people, and himſelf killed Mr. Rowe, the officer who commanded. To judge of the character of Kahoora, by what I had heard from many of his countrymen, he ſeemed to be more feared than beloved amongſt them. Not ſatisfied with telling me that he was a very bad man, ſome of them even importuned me to kill him: and, I believe, they were not a little ſurpriſed that I did not liſten to them; for according to their ideas of equity, this ought to have been done. But if I had followed the advice of all our pretended friends, I might have extirpated the whole race; for the people of each hamlet or village, by turns, applied to me to deſtroy the other.

On the 16th, at day-break, I ſet out with a party of men, in five boats, to collect food for our cattle. Captain Clerke, and ſeveral of the officers, Omai, and two of the natives accompanied me. We proceeded about three leagues up the ſound, and then landed on the eaſt ſide, at a place where I had formerly been. Here we cut as much graſs as loaded the two launches.

As we returned down the ſound, we viſited Graſs Cove, the memorable ſcene of the maſſacre of Captain Furneaux's people. Whilſt we were at this place, our curioſity prompted us to enquire into the circumſtances attending the melancholy

fate

fate of our countrymen; and Omai was made uſe of as our interpreter for this purpoſe. The natives preſent, anſwered all the queſtions that were put to them on the ſubject, without reſerve, and like men who are under no dread of puniſhment for a crime of which they are not guilty. For we already knew that none of them had been concerned in the unhappy tranſaction. They told us, that while our people were ſitting at dinner, ſurrounded by ſeveral of the natives, ſome of the latter ſtole, or ſnatched from them, ſome bread and fiſh, for which they were beat. This being reſented, a quarrel enſued, and two New Zealanders were ſhot dead, by the only two muſkets that were fired. For before our people had time to diſcharge a third, or to load again thoſe that had been fired, the natives ruſhed in upon them, overpowered them with their numbers, and put them all to death.

We ſtayed here till the evening, when, having loaded the reſt of the boats with graſs, celery, and ſcurvy-graſs, we embarked to return to the ſhips; where ſome of the boats did not arrive till one o'clock the next morning; and it was fortunate that they got on board then, for it afterwards blew a perfect ſtorm. In the evening the gale ceaſed, and the wind having veered to the eaſt, brought with it fair weather.

By this time more than two-thirds of the inhabitants of the Sound had ſettled themſelves about us. Great numbers of them daily frequented the ſhips, while our people were there melting ſome ſeal blubber. No Greenlander was ever fonder of train-oil, than our friends here ſeemed to be. They reliſhed the very ſkimmings of the kettle; but

but a little of the pure ſtinking oil was a delicious feaſt.

Having got on board as much hay and graſs as we judged ſufficient to ſerve the cattle till our arrival at Otaheite, and having completed the wood and water of both ſhips, on the 24th we weighed anchor, and ſtood out of the cove.

While we were unmooring and getting under ſail, many of the natives came to take their leave of us, or rather to obtain, if they could, ſome additional preſents from us before we left them. Accordingly, I gave to two of their chiefs, two pigs, a boar, and a ſow. They made me a promiſe not to kill them; though I muſt own I put no great faith in this. The animals which Captain Furneaux ſent on ſhore here, and which ſoon after fell into the hands of the natives, I was now told, were all dead; but I was afterwards informed, that Tiratou, a chief, had a great many cocks and hens in his poſſeſſion, and one of the ſows.

We had not been long at anchor near Motuara, before three or four canoes, filled with natives, came off to us from the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the Sound; and a briſk trade was carried on with them for the curioſities of this place. In one of theſe canoes was Kahoora, leader of the party who cut off the crew of the Adventure's boat. This was the third time he had viſited us, without betraying the ſmalleſt appearance of fear.

Next morning, he returned again with his whole family, men, women, and children, to the number of twenty and upwards. Omai was the firſt who acquainted me with his being along-ſide the ſhip, and deſired to know if he ſhould aſk him to come on board. I told him he might; and accordingly he introduced the chief into the cabin;

cabin; ſaying, "There is Kahoora; kill him!" He afterwards expoſtulated with me very earneſtly, ſaying, "Why do you not kill him? You tell me, if a man kills another in England, that he is hanged for it. This man has killed ten, and yet you will not kill him; though many of his countrymen deſire it; and it would be very good." Omai's arguments, though ſpecious enough, having no weight with me, I deſired him to aſk the chief, why he had killed Captain Furneaux's people? At this queſtion, Kahoora folded his arms, hung down his head, and looked like one caught in a trap; and, I firmly believe, he expected inſtant death. But no ſooner was he aſſured of his ſafety, than he became cheerful. He did not, however, ſeem willing to give me an anſwer to the queſtion that had been put to him, till I had, again and again, repeated my promiſe that he ſhould not be hurt. Then he ventured to tell us, that one of his countrymen having brought a ſtone hatchet to barter, the man to whom it was offered took it, and would neither return it, nor give any thing for it; on which the owner of it ſnatched up the bread as an equivalent; and then the quarrel began.

For ſome time before we arrived at New Zealand, Omai had expreſſed a deſire to take one of the natives with him to his own country. We had not been there many days, before he had an opportunity of being gratified in this; for a youth, about ſeventeen or eighteen years of age, named Taweiharooa, offered to accompany him. Finding that he was fixed in his reſolution to go with us, and having learnt that he was the only ſon of a deceaſed chief, I told his mother that, in all probability, he would never return; but

but this made no impreſſion on either; for when ſhe returned the next morning, to take her laſt farewell of him, all the time ſhe was on board ſhe remained quite cheerful, and went away wholly unconcerned. Another youth, about ten years of age, accompanied him as a ſervant, named Kokoa; he was preſented to me by his own father, who ſtripped him, and left him naked as he was born; indeed, he ſeemed to part with him with perfect indifference.

From my own obſervations, and from the information of Taweiharooa and others, it appears to me that the New Zealanders muſt live under perpetual apprehenſions of being deſtroyed by each other; there being few of their tribes that have not, as they think, ſuſtained wrongs from ſome other tribe, which they are continually upon the watch to revenge. And, perhaps, the deſire of a good meal may be no ſmall incitement. One hardly ever finds a New Zealander off his guard, either by night or by day; indeed, no other man can have ſuch powerful motives to be vigilant, as the preſervation both of body and of ſoul depends upon it. For, according to their ſyſtem of belief, the ſoul of the man whoſe fleſh is devoured by the enemy, is doomed to a perpetual fire; whilſt the ſoul of the man whoſe body has been reſcued from thoſe who killed him, as well as the ſouls of all who die a natural death, aſcend to the habitations of the gods.

Polygamy is allowed amongſt theſe people; and it is not uncommon for a man to have two or three wives. The women are marriageable at a very early age; and it ſhould ſeem, that one who is unmarried, is but in a forlorn ſtate.

Their

Their public contentions are frequent, or rather perpetual; for it appears, from their number of weapons, and dexterity in uſing them, that war is their principal profeſſion. Before they begin the onſet, they join in a war-ſong, to which they all keep the exacteſt time, and ſoon raiſe their paſſions to a degree of frantic fury, attended with the moſt horrid diſtortion of their eyes, mouths, and tongues, to ſtrike terror into their enemies; which, to thoſe who have not been accuſtomed to ſuch a practice, makes them appear more like demons than men, and would almoſt chill the boldeſt with fear. To this ſucceeds a circumſtance, almoſt foretold in their fierce demeanour, horrid, cruel, and diſgraceful to human nature; which is, cutting in pieces, even before being perfectly dead, the bodies of their enemies, and, after dreſſing them on a fire, devouring the fleſh, not only without reluctance, but with peculiar ſatisfaction.

On the 25th of February we ſailed from New Zealand, and had no ſooner loſt ſight of the land, than our two young adventurers repented heartily of the ſtep they had taken. All the ſoothing encouragement we could think of, availed but little. They wept both in public and private; and made their lamentations in a kind of ſong, which was expreſſive of their praiſes of their country. Thus they continued for many days; but at length their native country and their friends were forgot, and they appeared to be as firmly attached to us, as if they had been born amongſt us.

On the 29th of March, as we were ſtanding to the north-eaſt, the Diſcovery made the ſignal of

ſeeing land, which we ſoon diſcovered to be an iſland of no great extent.

On approaching the ſhore, we could perceive with our glaſſes that ſeveral of the natives were armed with long ſpears and clubs, which they brandiſhed in the air with ſigns of threatening; or, as ſome on board interpreted their attitudes, with invitations to land. Moſt of them appeared naked, except having a ſort of girdle, which, being brought up between the thighs, covered that part of the body. But ſome of them had pieces of cloth of different colours, white, ſtriped, or chequered, which they wore as a garment thrown about their ſhoulders; and almoſt all of them had a white wrapper about their heads, not much unlike a turban. They were of a tawny colour, and of a middling ſtature.

At this time a ſmall canoe was launched in a great hurry from the further end of the beach, and putting off with two men, paddled towards us, when I brought to. They ſtopped ſhort, however, as if afraid to approach, until Omai, who addreſſed them in the Otaheitean language, in ſome meaſure quieted their apprehenſions. They then came near enough to take ſome beads and nails, which were tied to a piece of wood, and thrown into the canoe. Omai, perhaps improperly, put the queſtion to them, whether they ever eat human fleſh? which they anſwered in the negative, with a mixture of indignation and abhorrence. One of them, whoſe name was Mourooa, being aſked how he came by a ſcar on his forehead, told us that it was the conſequence of a wound he had got in fighting with the people of an iſland, which lies to the north eaſtward, who ſometimes came to invade them. They afterward

terward took hold of a rope. Still, however they would not venture on board.

Mouroa was luſty and well made, but not very tall. His features were agreeable, and his diſpoſition ſeemingly no leſs ſo; for he made ſeveral droll geſticulations, which indicated both good-nature and a ſhare of humour. His colour was nearly of the ſame caſt with that common to the moſt ſouthern Europeans. The other man was not ſo handſome. Both of them had ſtrong ſtraight hair, of a jet colour, tied together on the crown of the head with a bit of cloth. They wore girdles of a ſubſtance made from the morus papyrifera, in the ſame manner as at the other iſlands of this ocean. They had on a kind of ſandals, made of a graſſy ſubſtance interwoven; and, as we ſuppoſed, intended to defend their feet againſt the rough coral rock. Their beards were long, and the inſide of their arms, from the ſhoulder to the elbow, and ſome other parts, were punctured or tatooed, after the manner of the inhabitants of almoſt all the other iſlands in the South Sea. The lobe of their ears was ſlit to ſuch a length, that one of them ſtuck there a knife and ſome beads, which he had received from us; and the ſame perſon had two poliſhed pearl ſhells, and a bunch of human hair, looſely twiſted, hanging about his neck, which was the only ornament we obſerved. The canoe they came in was not above ten feet long, and very narrow; but both ſtrong and neatly made. They paddled either end of it forward indifferently.

We now ſtood off and on; and as ſoon as the ſhips were in a proper ſtation, I ordered two boats to ſound the coaſt, and to endeavour to find a landing place. With this view, I went in one

of them myſelf, taking with me ſuch articles to give the natives, as I thought might ſerve to gain their good-will. I had no ſooner put off from the ſhip, than the canoe, with the two men, which had not left us long before, paddled towards my boat; and, having come along-ſide, Mouroa ſtepped into her, without being aſked, and without a moment's heſitation.

Omai, who was with me, was ordered to enquire of him where we could land; and he directed us to two different places. But I ſaw, with regret, that the attempt could not be made at either place, unleſs at the riſk of having our boats filled with water, or even ſtaved to pieces. Nor were we more fortunate in our ſearch for anchorage; for we could find no bottom till within a cable's length of the breakers.

While we were thus employed in reconnoitring the ſhore, great numbers of the natives thronged down upon the reef, all armed. Mouroa, who was now in my boat, probably thinking that this warlike appearance hindered us from landing, ordered them to retire back. As many of them complied, I judged he muſt be a perſon of ſome conſequence among them. Indeed, if we underſtood him right, he was the king's brother. So great was the curioſity of ſeveral of them, that they took to the water, and ſwimming off to the boats, came on board them without reſerve. Nay, we found it difficult to keep them out; and ſtill more difficult to prevent them carrying off every thing they could lay their hands upon. At length, when they perceived that we were returning to the ſhips, they all left us, except our original viſiter Mouroa. He, though not without evi-

dent

dent ſigns of fear, kept his place in my boat, and accompanied me on board the ſhip.

The cattle, and other new objects, that preſented themſelves to him there, did not ſtrike him with ſo much ſurpriſe as one might have expected. Perhaps his mind was too much taken up about his own ſafety, to allow him to attend to other things. I could but get little new information from him; and therefore, after he had made a ſhort ſtay, I ordered a boat to carry him in toward the land. As ſoon as he got out of the cabin, he happened to ſtumble over one of the goats. His curioſity now overcoming his fear, he ſtopped, looked at it, and aſked Omai what bird this was? and not receiving an immediate anſwer from him, he repeated the queſtion to ſome of the people upon deck. The boat having conveyed him pretty near to the ſurf, he leaped into the ſea, and ſwam aſhore. He had no ſooner landed, than the multitude of his countrymen gathered round him, as if with an eager curioſity to learn from him what he had ſeen; and in this ſituation they remained, when we loſt ſight of them.

After leaving Mangeea, as this iſland was called, on the afternoon of the 30th, we continued our courſe northward all that night, and till noon on the 31ſt; when we again ſaw land, in the direction of north-eaſt by north, diſtant eight or ten leagues; and next morning we got abreaſt of its north end. I ſent three armed boats to look for anchoring-ground, and a landing-place. In the mean time, we plyed up under the iſland with the ſhips.

Juſt as the boats were putting off, we obſerved ſeveral ſingle canoes coming from the ſhore.

They went firſt to the Diſcovery, ſhe being the neareſt ſhip. It was not long after, when three of the canoes came along-ſide of the Reſolution, each conducted by one man. They are long and narrow, and ſupported by outriggers. Some knives, beads, and other trifles, were conveyed to our viſiters; and they gave us a few cocoa-nuts, upon our aſking for them. But they did not part with them by way of exchange for what they had received from us. For they ſeemed to have no idea of bartering; nor did they appear to eſtimate any of our preſents at a high rate.

With a little perſuaſion, one of them came on board; and the other two, encouraged by his example, ſoon followed him. Their whole behaviour marked that they were quite at their eaſe.

After their departure, another canoe arrived, conducted by a man who brought a bunch of plantains as a preſent to me; aſking for me by name, having learnt it from Omai, who was ſent before us in a boat, with Mr. Gore. In return for this civility, I gave him an axe and a piece of red cloth; and he paddled back to the ſhore well ſatisfied. I afterward underſtood from Omai, that this preſent had been ſent from the king, or principal chief of the iſland.

Not long after a double canoe, in which were twelve men, came towards us. As they drew near the ſhip, they recited ſome words in concert, by way of chorus, one of their number firſt ſtanding up, and giving the word before each repetition. When they had finiſhed their ſolemn chant, they came along-ſide, and aſked for the chief. As ſoon as I ſhewed myſelf, a pig and a few cocoa-nuts were conveyed up into the ſhip;

and

and the principal perſon in the canoe made me an additional preſent of a piece of matting.

Our viſiters were conducted into the cabin, and to other parts of the ſhip. Some objects ſeemed to ſtrike them with a degree of ſurpriſe; but nothing fixed their attention for a moment. They were afraid to come near the cows and horſes; nor did they form the leaſt conception of their nature. But the ſheep and goats did not ſurpaſs the limits of their ideas; for they gave us to underſtand, that they knew them to be birds. I made a preſent to my new friend, of what I thought might be moſt acceptable to him; but, on his going away, he ſeemed rather diſappointed than pleaſed. I afterwards underſtood that he was very deſirous of obtaining a dog, of which animal this iſland could not boaſt.

The people in theſe canoes were in general of a middling ſize, and not unlike thoſe of Mangeea; though ſeveral were of a blacker caſt than any we ſaw there. Their features were various, and ſome of the young men rather handſome. Like thoſe of Mangeea, they had girdles of glazed cloth, or fine matting, the ends of which, being brought betwixt their thighs, covered the adjoining parts. Ornaments, compoſed of a ſort of broad braſs, ſtained with red, and ſtrung with berries of the night-ſhade, were worn about their necks. Their ears were bored, but not ſlit; and they were punctured upon their legs, from the knee to the heel, which made them appear as if they wore a kind of boots. Their behaviour was frank and cheerful, with a great deal of good nature.

Soon after day-break, we obſerved ſome canoes coming off to the ſhips, and one of them directed

its

its courſe to the Reſolution. In it was a hog, with ſome plantains and coca-nuts, for which the people who brought them demanded a dog from us, and refuſed every other thing that we offered in exchange. To gratify theſe people, Omai parted with a favourite dog he had brought from England; and with this acquiſition they departed highly ſatisfied.

I diſpatched Lieutenant Gore with three boats, two from the Reſolution, and one from the Diſcovery. Two of the natives, who had been on board, accompanied him, and Omai went with him in his boat as an interpreter. The ſhips being a full league from the iſland when the boats put off, it was noon before we could work up to it. We then obſerved a prodigious number of the natives abreaſt of the boats. In order to obſerve their motions, and to be ready to give ſuch aſſiſtance as our people might want, I kept as near the ſhore as was prudent. Some of the iſlanders, now and then came off to the ſhips in their canoes, with a few cocoa-nuts, which they exchanged for whatever was offered to them.

Theſe occaſional viſits ſerved to leſſen my ſolicitude about the people who had landed. Though we could get no information from our viſiters; yet their venturing on board ſeemed to imply, at leaſt, that their countrymen on ſhore had not made an improper uſe of the confidence put in them. At length, a little before ſun-ſet, we had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing the boats put off. When they got on board, I found that Mr. Gore himſelf, Omai, Mr. Anderſon, and Mr. Burney, were the only perſons who had landed. The tranſactions of the day were now fully reported to me

by

by Mr. Anderſon: I ſhall give them nearly in his words.

" We rowed toward a ſmall ſandy beach, upon which a great number of the natives had aſſembled. Several of the natives ſwam off; bringing cocoa-nuts; and Omai, with their countrymen, whom we had with us in the boats, made them ſenſible of our wiſh to land.

Mr. Burney, the firſt lieutenant of the Diſcovery, and I, went in one canoe, a little time before the other; and our conductors, watching attentively the motions of the ſurf, landed as ſafely upon the reef. An iſlander took hold of each of us, obviouſly with an intention to ſupport us in walking over the rugged rocks to the beach, where ſeveral of the others met us, holding the green boughs, of a ſpecies of mimoſa, in their hands, and ſaluted us by applying their noſes to ours.

We were conducted from the beach amidſt a crowd of people, who flocked with very eager curioſity to look at us. We were then led up an avenue of cocoa-palms; and ſoon came to a number of men, arranged in two rows, armed with clubs. After walking a little way amongſt theſe, we found a perſon, who ſeemed a chief, ſitting on the ground croſs-legged, cooling himſelf with a ſort of triangular fan made from a leaf of the cocoa-palm. In his ears were large bunches of beautiful red feathers; but he had no other mark to diſtinguiſh him from the reſt of the people, though they all obeyed him.

We proceeded ſtill amongſt the men armed with clubs, and came to a ſecond chief, who ſat fanning himſelf, and ornamented as the firſt. In the ſame manner we were conducted to a third chief, who ſeemed older than the two former.

He

He alſo was ſitting, and adorned with red feathers; and after ſaluting him as we had done the others, he deſired us both to ſit down.

In a few minutes, we ſaw, at a ſmall diſtance, about twenty young women, ornamented as the chiefs, with red feathers, engaged in a dance, which they performed to a ſlow and ſerious air, ſung by them all. We got up, and went forward to ſee them; and though we muſt have been ſtrange objects to them, they continued their dance without paying the leaſt attention to us. Their motions and ſong were performed in exact concert. In general, they were rather ſtout than ſlender, with black hair flowing in ringlets down the neck, and of an olive complexion. Their eyes were of a deep black, and each countenance expreſſed a degree of complacency and modeſty, peculiar to the ſex in every part of the world; but perhaps more conſpicuous here, where Nature preſented us with her productions in the fulleſt perfection, unbiaſſed in ſentiment by cuſtom, or unreſtrained in manner by art.

The natives now ſeemed to take ſome pains to ſeparate us from each other; every one of us having his circle, to ſurround and gaze at him: and when I told the chief with whom I ſat, that I wanted to ſpeak to Omai, he peremptorily refuſed my requeſt. At the ſame time, I found the people began to ſteal ſeveral trifling things which I had in my pocket; and when I took the liberty of complaining to the chief of this treatment, he juſtified it. From theſe circumſtances, I now entertained apprehenſions, that they might have formed the deſign of detaining us amongſt them.

Mr.

Mr. Burney happening to come to the place where I was, I mentioned my ſuſpicions to him; and, to put it to the teſt, whether they were well founded, we attempted to get to the beach. But we were ſtopped, when about half way, by ſome men who told us, that we muſt go back to the place which we had left. On coming up, we found Omai entertaining the ſame apprehenſions. But he had, as he fancied, an additional reaſon for being afraid; for he had obſerved, that they had dug a hole in the ground for an oven, which they were now heating; and he could aſſign no other reaſon for this, than that they meant to roaſt, and eat us, as is practiſed by the inhabitants of New Zealand.

In this manner we were detained the greateſt part of the day, being ſometimes together and ſometimes ſeparated, but always in a crowd; who, not ſatisfied with gazing at us, frequently deſired us to uncover parts of our ſkin; the ſight of which commonly produced a general murmur of admiration.

Upon our urging the buſineſs we came upon, they gave us to underſtand, that we muſt ſtay and eat with them; and a pig which we ſaw, ſoon after, lying near the oven, which they had prepared and heated, removed Omai's apprehenſions of being put into it himſelf; and made us think it might be intended for our repaſt. A piece of the young hog that had been dreſſed, was ſet before us, of which we were deſired to eat. Our appetites, however, had failed, from the fatigue of the day; and though we did eat a little to pleaſe them, it was without ſatisfaction to ourſelves.

It being now near ſun-ſet, we told them it was time to go on board. This they allowed; and

ſent

ſent down to the beach the remainder of the victuals that had been dreſſed, to be carried with us to the ſhips. They put us on board our boats, with the cocoa-nuts, plantains, and other proviſions, which they had brought; and we rowed to the ſhips, very well pleaſed that we had at laſt got out of the hands of our troubleſome maſters.

We regretted much, that our reſtrained ſituation gave us ſo little opportunity of making obſervations on the country. For, during the whole day, we were ſeldom a hundred yards from the place where we were introduced to the chiefs, on landing; and, conſequently, were confined to the ſurrounding objects. The firſt thing that preſented itſelf, worthy of our notice, was the number of people; which muſt have been, at leaſt, two thouſand. In general, they had their hair tied on the crown of the head, long, black, and of a moſt luxuriant growth. Many of the young men were perfect models in ſhape, of a complexion as delicate as that of the women, and, to appearance of a diſpoſition as amiable.

The wife of one of the chiefs appeared with her child, laid in a piece of red cloth, which had been preſented to her huſband; and ſeemed to carry it with great tenderneſs, ſuckling it much after the manner of our women. Another chief introduced his daughter, who was young and beautiful; but appeared with all the timidity natural to the ſex; though ſhe gazed on us with a kind of anxious concern, that ſeemed to ſtruggle with her fear, and to expreſs her aſtoniſhment at ſo unuſual a ſight.

About a third part of the men were armed with clubs and ſpears. The clubs were generally about ſix feet long, made of hard black wood,

lance-

lance-ſhaped at the end, but much broader, with the edge nicely ſcolloped, and the whole neatly poliſhed.

What the ſoil of the iſland may be, farther inland, we could not tell. But, toward the ſea, it is nothing more than a bank of coral, ten or twelve feet high, ſteep, and rugged; except where there are ſmall ſandy beaches, at ſome clefts where the aſcent is gradual. The reef or rock, that lines the ſhore entirely, runs to different breadths into the ſea, where it ends, all at once, and becomes like a high, ſteep wall."

Though the landing of our gentlemen proved the means of enriching my journal with the foregoing particulars, the principal object I had in view was, in a great meaſure, unattained; for the day was ſpent without getting any one thing from the iſland worth mentioning. The natives, however, were gratified with a ſight they never before had; and, probably, will never have again. And mere curioſity ſeems to have been the chief motive for keeping the gentlemen under ſuch reſtraint, and for uſing every art to prolong their continuance amongſt them.

Omai was Mr. Gore's interpreter; but that was not the only ſervice he performed this day. He was aſked, by the natives, a great many queſtions concerning us; and according to the account he gave me, his anſwers were not a little upon the marvellous. As, for inſtance, he told them, that our country had ſhips as large as their iſland; on board which were inſtruments of war, of ſuch dimenſions, that ſeveral people might ſit within them; and that one of them was ſufficient to cruſh the whole iſland at one ſhot. This led

them to enquire of him, what ſort of guns we actually had in our two ſhips. He ſaid, that though they were but ſmall, in compariſon with thoſe he had juſt deſcribed, yet, with ſuch as they were, we could, with the greateſt eaſe, and at the diſtance the ſhips were from the ſhore, deſtroy the iſland, and kill every ſoul in it. They perſevered in their enquiries, to know by what means this could be done; and Omai explained the matter as well as he could. He happened luckily to have a few cartridges in his pocket. Theſe he produced; the balls, and the gunpowder which was to ſet them in motion, were ſubmitted to inſpection; and, to ſupply the defects of his deſcription, an appeal was made to the ſenſes of the ſpectators. In the centre of a circle formed by the natives, the inconſiderable quantity of gunpowder, collected from his cartridges, was properly diſpoſed upon the ground, and, by means of a bit of burning wood from the oven, where dinner was dreſſing, ſet on fire. The ſudden blaſt, and loud report, the mingled flame and ſmoke, that inſtantly ſucceeded, now filled the whole aſſembly with aſtoniſhment; they no longer doubted the tremendous power of our weapons, and gave full credit to all that Omai had ſaid. This probably induced them to liberate the gentlemen.

Omai found three of his countrymen here; their ſtory is an affecting one, as related by him. About twenty perſons had embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to croſs over to the neighbouring iſland, Ulieta. A violent contrary wind ariſing, they could neither reach the latter, nor get back to the former. Their intended paſſage being a very ſhort one, their ſtock of proviſions was ſcanty,

ty, and ſoon exhauſted. The hardſhips they ſuffered, while driven along by the ſtorm, are not to be conceived. They paſſed many days without ſuſtenance. Their numbers gradually diminiſhed, worn out by famine and fatigue. Four only ſurvived, when the canoe overſet. However, they kept hanging by the ſide of the veſſel, till Providence brought them in ſight of the people of this iſland, who immediately ſent out canoes, and brought them aſhore. Of the four, one was ſince dead. The other three ſtill living, ſpoke highly of the kind treatment they here met with. And ſo well ſatisfied were they with their ſituation, that they refuſed the offer made to them by our gentlemen, at Omai's requeſt, of giving them a paſſage on board our ſhips, to reſtore them to their native iſlands.

The landing of our gentlemen on this iſland, though they failed in the object of it, cannot but be conſidered as a very fortunate circumſtance. It has proved, as we have ſeen, the means of bringing to our knowledge a matter of fact, not only very curious, but very inſtructive. The application of the above narrative is obvious. It will ſerve to explain, better than a thouſand conjectures of ſpeculative reaſoners, how the detached parts of the earth, and in particular how the iſlands of the South Seas may have been firſt peopled; eſpecially thoſe that lie remote from any inhabited continent, or from each other.

With a gentle breeze at eaſt, we got up with Wateeoo on the 3d of April, and I immediately diſpatched Mr. Gore, with two boats, to endeavour to procure ſome food for our cattle. As there ſeemed to be no inhabitants here to obſtruct our

taking away whatever we might think proper, our boats no ſooner reached the weſt ſide of the iſland, but they ventured in, and Mr. Gore and his party got ſafe on ſhore.

The ſupply obtained here, conſiſted of about a hundred cocoa-nuts for each ſhip; we alſo got for our cattle ſome graſs, and a quantity of the leaves and branches of young cocoa-trees, and of the wharra tree, as it is called at Otaheite.

The only birds ſeen here, were a beautiful cuckoo, of a cheſnut brown, variegated with black, which was ſhot. And upon the ſhore, ſome egg-birds; a ſmall ſort of curlew; blue and white herons; and great numbers of noddies.

One of our people caught a lizard, of a moſt forbidding aſpect, though ſmall, running up a tree; and many of another ſort were ſeen.

Though there were, at this time, no fixed inhabitants upon the iſland, indubitable marks remained of its being, at leaſt, occaſionally frequented. In particular, a few empty huts were found. In one of them, Mr. Gore left a hatchet and ſome nails, to the full value of what we took away.

As ſoon as the boats were hoiſted in, I made ſail again to the northward. Although Hervey's Iſland, diſcovered in 1773, was not above fifteen leagues diſtant, yet we did not get ſight of it till day-break in the morning. As we drew near it, we obſerved ſeveral canoes put off towards the ſhips. There were from three to ſix men in each of them. They ſtopped at the diſtance of about a ſtone's throw from the ſhip; and it was ſome time before Omai could prevail upon them to come along-ſide; but no entreaties could induce

any

any of them to venture on board. Indeed, their diſorderly and clamorous behaviour, by no means indicated a diſpoſition to truſt us, or treat us well. We afterwards learnt, that they had attempted to take ſome oars out of the Diſcovery's boat that lay along-ſide, and ſtruck a man who endeavoured to prevent them. They alſo cut away, with a ſhell, a net with meat, which hung over that ſhip's ſtern, and abſolutely refuſed to reſtore it; though we afterwards purchaſed it of them. Thoſe who were about our ſhip, behaved in the ſame daring manner. At the ſame time, they immediately ſhewed a knowledge of bartering, and ſold ſome fiſh they had for ſmall nails, of which they were immoderately fond, and called them goore. But they caught, with the greateſt avidity, bits of paper, or any thing elſe that was thrown to them.

Theſe people ſeemed to differ as much in perſon, as in diſpoſition, from the natives of Wateeoo; though the diſtance between the two iſlands is not very great. Their colour was of a deeper caſt; and ſeveral had a fierce, rugged aſpect, reſembling the natives of New Zealand. The ſhell of a pearl-oyſter, poliſhed, hung about the neck, was the only perſonal decoration that we obſerved amongſt them; for not one of them had adopted that mode of ornament, ſo generally prevalent amongſt the natives of this ocean, of puncturing, or tatooing, their bodies.

Though ſingular in this, we had the moſt unequivocal proofs of their being of the ſame common race. Their language approached ſtill nearer to the dialect of Otaheite than that of Wateeoo or Mangeea.

Having but very little wind, it was one o'clock before we drew near the north-weſt part of the iſland; when I ſent Lieutenant King, with two armed boats to ſound and reconnoitre the coaſt, while we ſtood off and on with the ſhips.

At three o'clock, the boats returned; and Mr. King informed me, "that there was no anchorage for the ſhips; and that the boats could only land on the outer edge of the reef, which lay about a quarter of a mile from the dry land. He ſaid, that a number of the natives came down upon the reef, armed with long pikes and clubs. But, as he had no motive to land, he did not give them an opportunity to uſe them."

If I had been ſo fortunate as to have procured a ſupply of water, and of graſs, at any of the iſlands we had lately viſited, it was my purpoſe to have ſtood back to the ſouth, till I had met with a weſterly wind. But the certain conſequence of doing this, without ſuch a ſupply, would have been the loſs of all the cattle, before we could poſſibly reach Otaheite, without gaining one advantage, with regard to the great object of our voyage. I therefore determined to bear away for the Friendly Iſlands, where I was ſure of meeting with abundance of every thing I wanted.

April the 7th, I ſteered weſt by ſouth, with a fine breeze eaſterly. I propoſed to proceed firſt to Middleburgh, or Eooa; thinking, if the wind continued favourable, that we had food enough on board for the cattle, to laſt till we ſhould reach that iſland. But, about noon, next day, thoſe faint breezes, that had attended and retarded us ſo long, again returned; and I found it ne-

ceſſary

ceſſary to haul more to the north, to get into the latitude of Palmerſtone's and Savage Iſlands, diſcovered in 1774, during my laſt voyage; that if neceſſity required it, we might have recourſe to them.

At length, at day-break, on the 13th, we ſaw Palmerſtone Iſland, diſtant about five leagues. However, we did not get up with it, till eight o'clock the next morning. I then ſent four boats, with an officer in each, to ſearch the coaſt for the moſt convenient landing place.

The boats firſt examined the ſouth eaſternmoſt part, and failing there, ran down to the eaſt, where we had the ſatisfaction to ſee them land. This place is not inhabited.

About one o'clock, one of the boats came on board, laden with ſcurvy-graſs and young cocoa-nut trees; which at this time, was a feaſt for the cattle. Before evening, I went aſhore in a ſmall boat, accompanied by Captain Clerke.

We found every body hard at work, and the landing place to be in a ſmall creek. Upon the buſhes that front the ſea, or even farther in, we found a great number of men of war birds, tropic birds, and two ſorts of boobies, which, at this time, were laying their eggs, and ſo tame, that they ſuffered us to take them off with our hands.

At one part of the reef, which looks into, or bounds, the lake that is within, there was a large bed of coral, almoſt even with the ſurface, which afforded, perhaps, one of the moſt enchanting proſpects that Nature has any where produced. Its baſe was fixed to the ſhore, but reached ſo far in, that it could not be ſeen; ſo that it ſeemed to be ſuſpended in the water, which deepened ſo ſuddenly,

ſuddenly, that, at the diſtance of a few yards, there might be ſeven or eight fathoms. The ſea was, at this time, quite unruffled; and the ſun ſhining bright, expoſed the various ſorts of coral, in the moſt beautiful order. This ſcene was enlivened by numerous ſpecies of fiſhes gliding along in apparent ſecurity.

There were no traces of inhabitants having ever been here; if we except a ſmall piece of a canoe that was found upon the beach, which, probably, may have drifted from ſome other iſland.

After the boats were laden, I returned on board, leaving Mr. Gore, with a party, to paſs the night on ſhore, in order to be ready to go to work early the next morning.

That day was accordingly ſpent, as the preceding one had been, in collecting food for the cattle. Having got a ſufficient ſupply by ſunſet, I ordered every body on board. But having little or no wind, I determined to wait, and to employ the next day, in trying to get ſome cocoa-nuts from the next iſland, where we could obſerve that thoſe trees were in much greater abundance than where we had already landed.

With this view I went with the boats to the weſt ſide of the iſland, and landed with little difficulty; and immediately ſet the people to gather cocoa-nuts, which we found in great abundance. Omai, who was with me, caught, with a ſcoop net, in a very ſhort time, as much fiſh as ſerved the whole party on ſhore for dinner, beſides ſending ſome to both ſhips. Here were alſo great abundance of birds, particularly men of war and tropic birds; ſo that we fared ſumptuouſly. And

it

it is but doing juſtice to Omai to ſay, that, in in theſe excurſions, he was of the greateſt uſe. For he not only caught the fiſh, but dreſſed theſe, and the birds we killed, in an oven, with heated ſtones, after the faſhion of his country, with a dexterity and good humour that did him great credit.

We found this iſlot near a half larger than the other, and almoſt entirely covered with cocoa palms. A young turtle had been lately thrown aſhore here, as it was ſtill full of maggots. We found ſome ſcorpions, a few other inſects, and a greater number of fiſh upon the reefs.

Upon the whole, we did not ſpend our time unprofitably at this laſt iſlot; for we got there about twelve hundred cocoa-nuts, which were equally divided amongſt the whole crew.

The nine or ten low iſlots, comprehended under the name of Palmerſtone's Iſland, may be reckoned the heads or ſummits of the reef of coral rock, that connects them together, covered only with a thin coat of ſand, yet clothed, as already obſerved, with trees and plants.

The heat, which had been great for about a month, became now much more diſagreeable, from the cloſe rainy weather; and, from the moiſture attending it, threatened ſoon to be noxious. However, it is remarkable enough, that though the only refreſhment we had received ſince leaving the Cape of Good Hope, was that at New Zealand, there was not, yet, a ſingle perſon on board ſick, from the conſtant uſe of ſalt food, or viciſſitude of climate.

In the night between the 24th and 25th we paſſed Savage Iſland, which I had diſcovered in

1774. I ſteered for the ſouth, and then hauled up for Annamooka.

It was no ſooner day-light, than we were viſited by ſix or ſeven canoes from different iſlands, bringing with them, beſides fruits and roots, two pigs, ſeveral fowls, ſome large wood-pigeons, ſmall rails, and large violet-coloured coots. All theſe they exchanged with us for beads, nails, hatchets, &c. They had alſo other articles of commerce; but I ordered that no curioſities ſhould be purchaſed till the ſhips ſhould be ſupplied with proviſions, and leave given for that purpoſe. Knowing, alſo, from experience, that, if all our people might trade with the natives, according to their own caprice, perpetual quarrels would enſue, I ordered that particular perſons ſhould manage the traffic both on board and on ſhore, prohibiting all others to interfere. Before mid-day, Mr. King, who had been ſent to Komango, returned with ſeven hogs, ſome fowls, a quantity of fruit and roots, and ſome graſs for the cattle. His party was very civilly treated at Komango. The inhabitants did not ſeem to be numerous; and their huts, which ſtood cloſe to each other, within a plantain walk, were but indifferent. Not far from them was a pretty large pond of freſh water, tolerably good; but there was no appearance of any ſtream. With Mr. King came on board the chief of the iſland, named Tooboulangee; and another, whoſe name was Taipa. They brought with them a hog, as a preſent to me, promiſing more the next day; and they kept their word.

I now reſumed the very ſame ſtation which I had occupied when I viſited Annamooka three

years

years before; and probably, almoſt in the ſame place where Taſman, the firſt diſcoverer of this and ſome of the neighbouring iſlands, anchored in 1643.

The following day I went aſhore, accompanied by Captain Clerke. Toobou, the chief of the iſland, conducted me and Omai to his houſe. We found it ſituated on a pleaſant ſpot, in the centre of his plantation. While we were on ſhore, we procured a few hogs and ſome fruit, by bartering; and, before we got on board again, the ſhips were crowded with the natives. Few of them coming empty-handed, every neceſſary refreſhment was now in the greateſt plenty.

I landed again in the afternoon, with a party of marines; and, at the ſame time, the horſes, and ſuch of the cattle as were in a weakly ſtate, were ſent on ſhore. Every thing being ſettled to my ſatisfaction, I returned to the ſhip at ſunſet, leaving the command upon the iſland to Mr. King.

Next day, May 3d, our various operations on ſhore began. In the evening, before the natives retired from our poſt, Taipa harangued them for ſome time. We could only gueſs at the ſubject; and judged, that he was inſtructing them how to behave towards us, and encouraging them to bring the produce of the iſland to market. We experienced the good effects of his eloquence in the plentiful ſupply of proviſions which, next day, we received.

On the 6th, we were viſited by a great chief from Tongataboo, whoſe name was Feenou, and whom Taipa was pleaſed to introduce to us as king of all the Friendly Iſles. All the natives paid their obeiſance to him, by bowing their heads

heads as low as his feet, the ſoles of which they alſo touched with each hand, firſt with the palm, and then with the back part. There could be little room to ſuſpect that a perſon, received with ſo much reſpect, could be any thing leſs than the king.

In the afternoon, I went to pay this great man a viſit, having firſt received a preſent of two fiſh from him, brought on board by one of his ſervants. As ſoon as I landed, he came up to me. He appeared to be about thirty years of age, tall, but thin, and had more of the European features than any I had yet ſeen here. After a ſhort ſtay, our new viſiter, and five or ſix of his attendants, accompanied me on board. I gave ſuitable preſents to them all, and entertained them in ſuch a manner, as I thought would be moſt agreeable.

In the evening I attended them on ſhore in my boat, into which the chief ordered three hogs to be put, as a return for the preſents he had received from me.

The firſt day of our arrival at Annamooka, one of the natives had ſtolen, out of the ſhip, a large junk axe. I now applied to Feenou, who was my gueſt on the 8th, to exert his authority to get it reſtored to me; and ſo implicitly was he obeyed, that it was brought on board while we were at dinner. Theſe people gave us very frequent opportunities of remarking what expert thieves they were. Even ſome of the chiefs did not think this profeſſion beneath them. On the lower claſs a flogging ſeemed to make no greater impreſſion than it would have done upon the mainmaſt. When any of them happened to be caught in the act, their ſuperiors, far from interceding for them, would often adviſe us to kill them. As this was

a puniſh-

a puniſhment we did not chuſe to inflict, they generally eſcaped without any puniſhment at all. Captain Clerke, at laſt, hit upon a mode of treatment, which, we thought, had ſome effect. He put them under the hands of the barber, and completely ſhaved their heads; thus pointing them out as objects of ridicule to their countrymen, and enabling our people to deprive them of future opportunities for a repetition of their rogueries, by keeping them at a diſtance.

Feenou, underſtanding that I meant to proceed directly to Tongataboo, importuned me ſtrongly to alter this plan, to which he expreſſed as much averſion as if he had ſome particular intereſt to promote by diverting me from it. In preference to it, he warmly recommended an iſland, or rather a group of iſlands, called Hapace, lying to the north-eaſt. There, he aſſured us, we could be ſupplied plentifully with every refreſhment, in the eaſieſt manner; and, to add weight to his advice, he engaged to attend us thither in perſon. He carried his point with me; and Hapaee was made choice of for our next ſtation. As it had never been viſited by any European ſhips, the examination of it became an object with me.

After ſome unimportant tranſactions, at day-break, in the morning of the 16th, we ſteered north-eaſt for Hapaee, which was now in ſight. Next day we came to anchor. By this time the ſhips were filled with the natives. They brought from the ſhore, hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots, which they exchanged for hatchets, knives, nails, beads, and cloth. I went on ſhore, accompanied by Omai and Feenou, landing at the north part

of Lefooga, a little to the right of the ſhip's ſtation.

The chief conducted me to a hut, ſituated cloſe to the ſea-beach, which I had ſeen brought thither, but a few minutes before, for our reception. In this Feenou, Omai, and myſelf, were ſeated. The other chiefs, and the multitude, compoſed a circle, on the outſide, fronting us; and they alſo ſat down. I was then aſked, how long I intended to ſtay? On my ſaying, five days, Taipa was ordered to come and ſit by me, and proclaim this to the people. He then harangued them, in a ſpeech moſtly dictated by Feenou. The purport of it, as I learnt from Omai, was, that they were all, both old and young, to look upon me as a friend, who intended to remain with them a few days; that, during my ſtay, they muſt not ſteal any thing, nor moleſt me any other way; and that it was expected, they ſhould bring hogs, fowls, fruit, &c. to the ſhips, where they would receive, in exchange for them, ſuch and ſuch things, which he enumerated. Taipa then took occaſion to ſignify to me, that it was neceſſary I ſhould make a preſent to the chief of of the iſland, whoſe name was Earoupa. I was not unprepared for this; and gave him ſuch articles as far exceeded his expectation. My liberality to him brought upon me demands, of the ſame kind, from two chiefs of other iſles who were preſent; and from Tapia himſelf.

After viewing the watering-place, we returned to our former ſtation, where I found a baked hog, and ſome yams, ſmoking hot, ready to be carried on board for my dinner. I invited Feenou, and his friends, to partake of it; and we embarked

for

for the ſhip; but none but himſelf ſat down with us at the table. After dinner I conducted them on ſhore; and, before I returned on board, the chief gave me a fine large turtle, and a quantity of yams. Our ſupply of proviſions was copious; for, in the courſe of the day, we got, by barter, along-ſide the ſhip, about twenty ſmall hogs, beſide fruit and roots.

Next morning early, Feenou and Omai, who ſcarcely ever quitted the chief, and now ſlept on ſhore, came on board. The object of the viſit was, to require my preſence upon the iſland; where I ſaw a large concourſe of people already aſſembled. I gueſſed that ſomething more than ordinary was in agitation; but could not tell what, nor could Omai inform me.

I had not long been landed, before near a hundred of the natives appeared in ſight, and advanced, laden with yams, bread-fruit, plantains, cocoa-nuts, and ſugar-canes. They depoſited their burthens, in two heaps, or piles, upon our left. Soon after, arrived a number of others, bearing the ſame kind of articles; which were collected into two piles upon the right. To theſe were tied two pigs and ſix fowls; and to thoſe upon the left, ſix pigs and two turtles.

As ſoon as this munificent collection of proviſions was laid down in order, and diſpoſed to the beſt advantage, the bearers of it joined the multitude, who formed a large circle round the whole. Preſently after a number of men entered this circle, or area, before us, armed with clubs, made of the green branches of the cocoa-nut tree. Theſe paraded about for a few minutes, and then retired; the one half to one ſide, and the other half to the other ſide, ſeating them-

ſelves before the ſpectators. Soon after, they ſucceſſively entered the liſts, and entertained us with ſingle combats. One champion, riſing up and ſtepping forward from one ſide, challenged thoſe of the other ſide, by expreſſive geſtures, more than by words, to ſend one of their body to oppoſe him. If the challenge was accepted, which was generally the caſe, the two combatants put themſelves in proper attitudes, and then began the engagement, which continued till one or other owned himſelf conquered, or till their weapons were broken. As ſoon as each combat was over, the victor ſquatted himſelf down facing the chief, then roſe up, and retired. At the ſame time, ſome old men, who ſeemed to ſit as judges, gave their plaudit in a few words; and the multitude, eſpecially thoſe on the ſide to which the victor belonged, celebrated the glory he had acquired, in two or three huzzas.

This entertainment was now and then ſuſpended for a few minutes. During theſe intervals there were both wreſtling and boxing matches. The firſt were performed in the ſame manner as at Otaheite; and the ſecond differed very little from the method practiſed in England. But what ſtruck us with the moſt ſurpriſe was, to ſee a couple of luſty wenches ſtep forth, and begin boxing, without the leaſt ceremony, and with as much art as the men. This conteſt, however, did not laſt above half a minute, before one of them gave it up. The conquering heroine received the ſame applauſe from the ſpectators, which they beſtowed upon the ſucceſsful combatants of the other ſex. We expreſſed ſome diſlike at this part of the entertainment; which, however, did not prevent two other females from

entering

entering the lifts. They ſeemed to be girls of ſpirit, and would certainly have given each other a good drubbing, if two old women had not interpoſed to part them. All theſe combats were exhibited in the midſt of at leaſt three thouſand people, and were conducted with the greateſt good humour on all ſides.

As ſoon as theſe diverſions were ended, the chief told me, that the heaps of proviſions on our right hand were a preſent to Omai; and that thoſe on our left hand, being about two-thirds of the whole quantity, were given to me. He added, that I might take them on board whenever it was convenient; but that there would be no occaſion to ſet any of our people as guards over them, as I might be aſſured, that not a ſingle cocoa-nut would be taken away by the natives. So it proved; for I left every thing behind, and returned to the ſhip to dinner, carrying the chief with me; and when the proviſions were removed on board, in the afternoon, not a ſingle article was miſſing. There was as much as loaded four boats; and I could not but be ſtruck with the munificence of Feenou; for this preſent far exceeded any I had ever received from any of the ſovereigns of the various iſlands I had viſited in the Pacific Ocean. I loſt no time in convincing our friend, that I was not inſenſible of his liberality; for, before he quitted my ſhip, I beſtowed upon him ſuch of my commodities, as, I gueſſed, were moſt valuable in his eſtimation.

Feenou had expreſſed a deſire to ſee the marines go through the military exerciſe. As I was deſirous to gratify his curioſity, I ordered them all aſhore, from both ſhips, in the morning. After they had performed various evolutions, and fired

ſeveral vollies, with which the numerous body of ſpectators ſeemed well pleaſed, the chief entertained us, in his turn, with an exhibition, which, as was acknowledged by us all, was performed with a dexterity and exactneſs, far ſurpaſſing the ſpecimen we had given of our military manœuvres. It was a kind of a dance, ſo entirely different from any thing I had ever ſeen, that I fear, I can give no deſcription that will convey any tolerable idea of it to my readers. It was performed by men; and one hundred and five perſons bore their parts in it. Each of them had in his hand an inſtrument neatly made, ſhaped ſomewhat like a paddle, of two feet and a half in length, with a ſmall handle and a thin blade; ſo that they were very light. With theſe inſtruments, they made many and various flouriſhes, each of which was accompanied with a different movement. At firſt, the performers ranged themſelves in three lines; and, by various evolutions, each man changed his ſtation in ſuch a manner, that thoſe who had been in the rear came into the front. Nor did they remain long in the ſame poſition. At one time, they extended themſelves in one line; they then formed into a ſemicircle; and laſtly into two ſquare columns. While this laſt movement was executing, one of them advanced, and performed an antic dance before me; with which the whole ended.

The muſical inſtruments conſiſted of two drums, or rather two hollow logs of wood, from which ſome varied notes were produced, by beating on them with two ſticks. It did not, however, appear to me, that the dancers were much aſſiſted by theſe ſounds, but by a chorus of vocal muſic, in which all the performers joined at the

ſame time. Their ſong was not deſtitute of pleaſing melody; and all their correſponding motions were executed with ſo much ſkill, that the numerous body of dancers ſeemed to act, as if they were one great machine. It was the opinion of every one of us, that ſuch a performance would have met with univerſal applauſe on an European theatre; and it ſo far exceeded any attempt we had made to entertain them, that they ſeemed to pique themſelves upon the ſuperiority they had over us. As to our muſical inſtruments, they held none of them in the leaſt eſteem, except the drum; and even that they did not think equal to their own.

In order to give them a more favourable opinion of Engliſh amuſements, and to leave their minds fully impreſſed with the deepeſt ſenſe of our ſuperior attainments, I directed ſome fireworks to be got ready; and, after it was dark, played them off in the preſence of Feenou, the other chiefs, and a vaſt concourſe of their people. Our water and ſky-rockets, in particular, pleaſed and aſtoniſhed them beyond all conception; and the ſcale was now turned in our favour.

This, however, ſeemed only to furniſh them with an additional motive to proceed to freſh exertions of their very ſingular dexterity; and our fireworks were no ſooner ended, than a ſucceſſion of dances began. As a prelude to them, a band of muſic, or chorus of eighteen men, ſeated themſelves before us, in the centre of the circle. Four or five of this band had pieces of large bamboo, from three to five or ſix feet long; the upper end open, but the other end cloſed by one of the joints. With this cloſe end, the performers kept conſtantly ſtriking the ground, though

ſlowly,

ſlowly, thus producing different notes, according to the different lengths of the inſtruments, but all of them of the hollow or baſe ſort; to counteract which, a perſon kept ſtriking quickly, and with two ſticks, a piece of the ſame ſubſtance, ſplit, and laid along the ground, and, by that means, furniſhing a tone as acute, as thoſe produced by the others were grave. The reſt of the band, as well as thoſe who performed upon the bamboos, ſung a ſlow and ſoft air, which ſo tempered the harſher notes of the above inſtruments, that no bye-ſtander, however accuſtomed to hear the moſt perfect and varied modulation of ſweet ſounds, could avoid confeſſing the vaſt power, and pleaſing effect, of this ſimple harmony.

Soon after they had finiſhed, nine women exhibited themſelves, and ſat down fronting the hut where the chief was. A man then roſe, and ſtruck the firſt of theſe women on the back, with both fiſts joined. He proceeded, in the ſame manner to the ſecond and third; but when he came to the fourth, whether from accident or deſign I cannot tell, inſtead of the back, he ſtruck her on the breaſt. Upon this, a perſon roſe inſtantly from the crowd, who brought him to the ground with a blow on the head; and he was carried off without the leaſt noiſe or diſorder. But this did not ſave the other five women from ſo odd a diſcipline, or perhaps neceſſary ceremony; for a perſon ſucceeded him, who treated them in the ſame manner. Their diſgrace did not end here; for when they danced, they had the mortification to find, their performance twice diſapproved of, and were obliged to repeat it.

Curioſity, on both ſides, being now ſufficiently gratified, by the exhibition of the various entertainments I have deſcribed, I began to have

time

time to look about me. Accordingly, next day, I took a walk into the Iſland of Leefooga, of which I was deſirous to obtain ſome knowledge. I found it to be, in ſeveral reſpects, ſuperior to Annamooka. The plantations were more numerous, and more extenſive. We obſerved large ſpots covered with the paper mulberry-trees; and the plantations, in general, were well ſtocked with ſuch roots and fruits as are the natural produce of the iſland. To theſe I made ſome addition, by ſowing the ſeeds of Indian corn, melons, pumpkins, and the like.

The iſland is not above ſeven miles long; and, in ſome places, not above two or three broad. The eaſt ſide of it, which is expoſed to the trade wind, has a reef, running to a conſiderable breadth from it, on which the ſea breaks with great violence.

When I returned from my excurſion into the country, I found a large ſailing canoe faſt to the ſhip's ſtern. In this canoe was Latooliboula, whom I had ſeen at Tongataboo, during my laſt voyage; and who was then ſuppoſed by us to be the king of that iſland. He ſat in the canoe, with all that gravity, by which he was ſo remarkably diſtinguiſhed at that time; nor could I, by any entreaties, prevail upon him now to come into the ſhip. Many of the iſlanders were preſent; and they all called him Arekee, which ſignifies king. I had never heard any one of them give this title to Feenou, however extenſive his authority over them, both here and at Annamooka, had appeared to be; which had, all along, inclined me to ſuſpect that he was not the king; though his friend, Taipa, had taken pains to make me believe he was. Feenou was on board

my

my ſhip at the ſame time; but neither of theſe great men took the leaſt notice of each other.

In the morning of the 23d, as we were going to unmoor, in order to leave the iſland, Feenou, and his prime-miniſter, Taipa, came along-ſide in a ſailing canoe, and informed me, that they were ſetting out for Vavaoo, an iſland, which they ſaid, lies about two days ſail to the northward of Hapaee. The object of their voyage, they would have me believe, was to get for me an additional ſupply of hogs, and ſome red feathered caps for Omai, to carry to Otaheite, where they are in high eſteem. Feenou aſſured me, that he ſhould be back in four or five days; and deſired me not to ſail till his return, when, he promiſed he would accompany me to Tongataboo. I thought this a good opportunity to get ſome knowledge of Vavaoo, and propoſed to him to go thither with the ſhips; but he ſeemed not to approve of the plan; and, by way of diverting me from it, told me, that there was neither harbour nor anchorage about it. I therefore conſented to wait, in my preſent ſtation, for his return; and he immediately ſet out.

In my walk, on the 25th, I happened to ſtep into a houſe, where I found a woman ſhaving a child's head with a ſhark's tooth, ſtuck into the end of a piece of ſtick. I obſerved that ſhe firſt wetted the hair with a rag dipped in water, applying her inſtrument to that part which ſhe had previouſly ſoaked. The operation ſeemed to give no pain to the child; although the hair was taken off as cloſe as if one of our razors had been employed. Encouraged by what I now ſaw, I ſoon after tried one of thoſe ſingular inſtruments upon myſelf, and found it to be an excellent *ſuccedaneum.*

daneum. However, the men of theſe iſlands have recourſe to another contrivance when they ſhave their beards. The operation is performed with two ſhells; one of which they place under a ſmall part of the beard, and with the other, applied above, they ſcrape that part off. In this manner they are able to ſhave very cloſe. The proceſs is, indeed, rather tedious, but not painful; and there are men amongſt them, who ſeem to profeſs this trade. It was as common, while we were here, to ſee our ſailors go aſhore to have their beards ſcraped off, after the faſhion of Hapaee, as it was to ſee their chiefs come on board to be ſhaved by our barbers.

Finding that little or nothing of the produce of the iſland was now brought to the ſhips, I reſolved to change our ſtation, and in the afternoon of the 26th of May, I hauled into a bay that lies between the ſouth end of Lefooga, and the north end of Hoolaiva, and there anchored.

Near the ſouth end of the Iſland of Lefooga, we met with an artificial mount. From the ſize of ſome trees that were growing upon it, and from other appearances, I gueſſed that it had been raiſed in remote times. I judged it to be about forty feet high; and the diameter of its ſummit meaſured fifty feet. At the bottom of this mount ſtood a ſtone, which muſt have been hewn off coral rock. It was four feet broad, two and a half thick, and fourteen high; and we were told by the natives preſent, that not above half its length appeared above ground. They called it Tangata Arekee *; and ſaid, that it had been ſet up, and the mount raiſed, by ſome

* Tangata, in their language, is man; Arekee, king.

of their forefathers, in memory of one of their kings; but how long ſince they could not tell.

About noon, a large ſailing canoe came under our ſtern, in which was a perſon named Futtafaihe, or Poulaho, or both; who, as the natives then on board told us, was king of Tangataboo, and of all the neighbouring iſlands. It being my intereſt, as well as my inclination, to pay court to all the great men, without making enquiry into the validity of their aſſumed titles, I invited Poulaho on board; he brought with him, as a preſent, two fat hogs, though not ſo fat as himſelf. If weight of body could give weight in rank or power, he was certainly the moſt eminent man, in that reſpect, we had ſeen. I found him to be a ſedate, ſenſible man. He viewed the ſhip, and the ſeveral new objects, with uncommon attention; and aſked many pertinent queſtions; one of which was: What could induce us to viſit theſe iſlands? After he had ſatisfied his curioſity in looking at the cattle, and other novelties which he met with upon deck, I deſired him to walk down into the cabin. To this his attendants objected, ſaying, that if he were to accept of that invitation, it muſt happen, that people would walk over his head; but the chief, himſelf leſs ſcrupulous, in this reſpect, than his attendants, waved all ceremony, and walked down.

Poulaho ſat down with us to dinner; but he ate little, and drank leſs. When we roſe from the table, he deſired me to accompany him aſhore. I attended the chief in my own boat, having firſt made preſents to him of ſuch articles as, I could obſerve, he valued much, and were even beyond his expectation to receive. I was not diſappointed in my view of thus ſecuring his friendſhip:

for

for the moment the boat reached the beach, he ordered two more hogs to be brought, and delivered to my people. He was then carried out of the boat, by ſome of his own people, upon a board reſembling a hand-barrow, and went and ſeated himſelf in a ſmall houſe near the ſhore; which ſeemed to have been erected there for his accommodation. He placed me at his ſide; and his attendants ſeated themſelves in a ſemicircle before us, on the outſide of the houſe. Behind the chief, or rather on one ſide, ſat an old woman, with a ſort of fan in her hand, whoſe office it was, to prevent his being peſtered with the flies.

I ſtaid till ſeveral of his attendants left him, firſt paying him obeiſance, by bowing the hand down to the ſole of his foot, and touching or tapping the ſame, with the upper and under ſide of the fingers of both hands. Others, who were not in the circle, came, as it ſeemed, on purpoſe, and paid him this mark of reſpect, and then retired, without ſpeaking a word. I was quite charmed with the decorum that was obſerved. I had no where ſeen the like, not even amongſt more civilized nations.

Poulaho, the king, as I ſhall now call him, came on board betimes next morning; and brought, as a preſent to me, one of their caps, made, or at leaſt covered, with red feathers. Theſe caps, or rather bonnets, are compoſed of the tail feathers of the tropic bird, with the red feathers of the parroquets wrought upon them, or jointly with them. They are made ſo as to tie upon the forehead without any crown, and have the form of a ſemicircle, whoſe radius is eighteen or twenty inches.

At day-break, the next morning, I weighed with a fine breeze, and ſtood to the weſtward, with a view to return to Annamooka. We were followed by ſeveral ſailing canoes, in one of which was the king. He quitted us in a ſhort time, but left his brother, and five of his attendants on board. We had alſo the company of a chief, juſt then arrived from Tongataboo, whoſe name was Toobouheitoa. The moment he arrived, he ſent his canoe away, and declared that he and five more, who came with him, would ſleep on board; ſo that I had now my cabin filled with viſiters. They brought plenty of proviſions with them, for which they always had ſuitable returns.

In our courſe the ſhip was very near running full upon a low, ſandy iſle, called Pootoo. It happened, very fortunately, that the people had juſt before been ordered upon deck, to put the ſhip about, ſo that the neceſſary movements were executed with judgment and alertneſs; and this alone ſaved us from deſtruction. The Diſcovery being aſtern, was out of danger. Such hazardous ſituations are the unavoidable companions of the man who goes upon a voyage of diſcovery.

This circumſtance frightened our paſſengers ſo much, that they expreſſed a ſtrong deſire to get aſhore. Accordingly, as ſoon as day-light returned, I hoiſted out a boat, and ordered the officer who commanded her, after landing them at Kotoo, to ſound along the reef for anchorage.

Having met with a convenient ſtation, we lay here until the 4th, when we weighed, and ſtood away for Annamooka, where we anchored next morning.

I went on ſhore ſoon after, and found the inhabitants very buſy in digging up yams, to bring

to

to market. Theſe were now in the greateſt perfection; and we procured a good quantity, in exchanges for pieces of iron.

About noon, next day, Feenou arrived from Vavaoo. He told us that ſeveral canoes, laden with hogs, and other proviſions, which had ſailed with him from that iſland, had been loſt, owing to the late blowing weather; and that every body on board them had periſhed. This melancholy tale did not ſeem to affect any of his countrymen who heard it; and, as to ourſelves, we were, by this time, too well acquainted with his character, to give much credit to ſuch a ſtory. The following morning, Poulaho, and the other chiefs, who had been wind-bound with him, arrived. I happened at this time to be aſhore, in company with Feenou; who now ſeemed to be ſenſible of the impropriety of his conduct, in aſſuming a character that did not belong to him. For he not only acknowledged Poulaho to be king of Tongataboo, and the other iſles, but affected to inſiſt much on it, which, no doubt, was with a view to make amends for his former preſumption. I left him, to viſit this greater man, whom I found ſitting with a few people before him. But, every one haſtening to pay court to him, the circle increaſed pretty faſt. I was very deſirous of obſerving Feenou's behaviour on this occaſion; and had the moſt convincing proof of his inferiority; for he placed himſelf amongſt the reſt that ſat before Poulaho, as attendants on his majeſty. Both he and Poulaho went on board with me to dinner; but only the latter ſat at table. Feenou, having made his obeiſance in the uſual way, ſaluting his ſovereign's foot with his head and hands, retired out of the cabin.

The king had before told us that this would happen; and it now appeared, that Feenou could not even eat or drink in his royal preſence.

At eight o'clock next morning, we ſteered for Tongataboo, having a gentle breeze at north-eaſt. About fourteen or fifteen ſailing veſſels, belonging to the natives, ſet out with us; but every one of them outran the ſhips conſiderably. In the afternoon of next day, we came to an anchor off that iſland, in a ſafe ſtation.

Soon after, I landed, accompanied by Omai, and ſome of the officers. We found the king waiting for us upon the beach. He immediately conducted us to a ſmall neat houſe, ſituated a little within the ſkirts of the woods, with a fine large area before it. This houſe, he told me, was at my ſervice, during our ſtay at the iſland; and a better ſituation we could not wiſh for.

We had not been long in the houſe, before a pretty large circle of the natives were aſſembled before us, and ſeated upon the area. A root of the kava plant being brought and laid down, before the king, he ordered it to be ſplit into pieces, and diſtributed to ſeveral people of both ſexes, who began the operation of chewing it; and a bowl of their favourite liquor was ſoon prepared. In the mean time, a baked hog, and two baſkets of baked yams were produced, and afterwards divided into ten portions. Theſe portions were then given to certain people preſent; but how many were to ſhare in each I could not tell. The liquor was next ſerved out, but, I obſerved, that not a fourth part of the company had taſted either the victuals or the drink.

As I intended to make ſome ſtay at Tongataboo, we pitched a tent, in the forenoon, juſt by

the

the houſe which Poulaho had aſſigned for our uſe. The horſes, cattle, and ſheep, were afterwards landed, and a party of marines, with their officer, ſtationed there as a guard. The obſervatory was then ſet up, at a ſmall diſtance from the other tent; and Mr. King reſided on ſhore, to attend the obſervations. The gunners were ordered to conduct the traffic with the natives, who thronged from every part of the iſland, with hogs, yams, cocoa-nuts, and other articles of their produce. In a ſhort time, our land poſt was like a fair, and the ſhips were ſo crowded with viſiters, that we had hardly room to ſtir upon the decks.

Feenou had taken up his reſidence in our neighbourhood; but he was no longer the leading man. However, we ſtill found him to be a perſon of conſequence, and we had daily proofs of his opulence and liberality, by the continuance of his valuable preſents. But the king was equally attentive in this reſpect; for ſcarcely a day paſſed, without receiving from him ſome conſiderable donation. We now heard, that there were other great men of the iſland, whom we had not as yet ſeen. Otaĝo and Toobou, in particular, mentioned a perſon named Mareewagee, who, they ſaid, was of the firſt conſequence in the place. Some of the natives even hinted, that he was too great a man to confer the honour of a viſit upon us. This account exciting my curioſity, I mentioned to Poulaho, that I was very deſirous of waiting upon Mareewagee; and he readily agreed to accompany me to the place of his reſidence; but we did not find him at home.

About noon the next day, this chief actually came to the neighbourhood of our poſt on ſhore;

and with him, a very conſiderable number of people of all ranks. I was informed that he had taken this trouble, on purpoſe to give me an opportunity of waiting upon him. In the afternoon, a party of us, therefore, accompanied by Feenou, landed to pay him a viſit. We found a perſon ſitting under a large tree, near the ſhore, a little to the right of the tent. A piece of cloth, at leaſt forty yards long, was ſpread before him, round which a great number of perſons of both ſexes were ſeated. It was natural to ſuppoſe that this was the great man; but we were undeceived by Feenou; who informed us, that another, who ſat on a piece of mat, a little way from this chief, to the right hand, was Mareewagee, who received us very kindly, and deſired us to ſit down by him. The perſon who ſat under the tree, fronting us, was called Toobou. Both he and Mareewagee had a venerable appearance. The latter is a ſlender man, and from his appearance ſeems to be conſiderably above three-ſcore years of age. The former is rather corpulent, and almoſt blind with a diſorder in his eyes; though not ſo old.

We entertained them for about an hour, with the performance of two French horns and a drum. But they ſeemed moſt pleaſed with the firing off a piſtol, which Captain Clerke had in his pocket. Before I took my leave, the large piece of cloth was rolled up, and with a few cocoa-nuts, preſented to me.

Toward noon, Poulaho returned from the place where we had left him two days before, and brought with him his ſon, a youth about twelve years of age. I had his company at dinner; but the ſon, though preſent, was not allowed to ſit

down

down with him. It was very convenient to have him for my gueſt. For, when he was preſent, which was generally the caſe while we ſtaid here, every other native was excluded from the table; and but few of them would remain in the cabin. The king was very ſoon reconciled to our manner of cookery. But ſtill, I believe he dined thus frequently with me, more for the ſake of what we gave him to drink, than for what we ſet before him to eat. For he had taken a liking to our wine, could empty his bottle as well as moſt men, and was as cheerful over it.

Having viſited Toobou, and interchanged preſents with him, ſoon after, Feenou came and acquainted me that young Fattafaihe, Poulaho's ſon, deſired to ſee me. I obeyed the ſummons, and found the prince and Omai ſitting under a large canopy of the finer ſort of cloth, with a piece of the coarſer ſort ſpread under them and before them, that was ſeventy-ſix yards long, and ſeven and a half broad. On one ſide was a large, old boar; and on the other ſide a heap of cocoa-nuts. A number of people were ſeated round the cloth; and amongſt them I obſerved Mareewagee, and others of the firſt rank. I was deſired to ſit down by the prince; and then Omai informed me, that he had been inſtructed by the king to tell me, that as he and I were friends, he hoped that his ſon might be joined in this friendſhip; and that as a token of my conſent, I would accept of his preſent. I very readily agreed to the propoſal; and it being now dinner-time, I invited them all on board.

Accordingly, the young prince, Mareewagee, Toobou, three or four inferior chiefs, and two reſpectable old ladies, of the firſt rank, accompa-

nied

nied me. Mareewagee was dreſſed in a new piece of cloth, on the ſkirts of which were fixed ſix pretty large patches of red feathers. This dreſs ſeemed to have been made on purpoſe for this viſit; for as ſoon as he had got on board, he put it off and preſented it to me. Every one of my viſiters received from me ſuch preſents as, I had reaſon to believe, they were highly ſatisfied with. When dinner came upon table, not one of them would ſit down, or eat a bit of any thing that was ſerved up. On expreſſing my ſurpriſe at this, they were all taboo, as they ſaid; which word has a very comprehenſive meaning; but in general ſignifies that a thing is forbidden. Dinner being over, and having gratified their curioſity, by ſhewing to them every part of the ſhip, I then conducted them aſhore.

As ſoon as the boat reached the beach, Feenou, and ſome others, inſtantly ſtepped out. Young Fattafaihe following them, was called back by Mareewagee, who now paid the heir apparent the ſame obeiſance, and in the ſame manner, that I had ſeen it paid to the king.

By this time I had acquired ſome certain information about the relative ſituations of the ſeveral great men, whoſe names have been ſo often mentioned. I now knew that Mareewagee and Toobou were brothers. Feenou was one of Mareewagee's ſons; and Tooboueitoa was another.

On the 16th in the morning, Mr. Gore and I took a walk into the country; in the courſe of which, nothing remarkable appeared, but our having opportunities of ſeeing the whole proceſs of making cloth, which is the principal manufacture of theſe iſlands, as well as of many others in this ocean.

This

This is performed in the following manner. The manufacturers, who are females, take the ſlender ſtalks, or trunks of the paper-mulberry, which they cultivate for that purpoſe, and which ſeldom grows more than ſix or ſeven feet in height, and about four fingers in thickneſs. From theſe they ſtrip the bark, and ſcrape off the outer rind with a muſcle-ſhell. The bark is then rolled up, to deſtroy the convexity which it had round the ſtalk, and macerated in water for ſome time. After this, it is laid acroſs the trunk of a ſmall tree, ſquared, and beaten with a ſquared wooden inſtrument, about a foot long, full of coarſe grooves on all ſides; but ſometimes with one that is plain. According to the ſize of the bark, a piece is ſoon produced; but the operation is often repeated by another hand, or it is folded ſeveral times and beat longer, which ſeems rather intended to cloſe, than to divide its texture. When this is ſufficiently effected, it is ſpread out to dry; the pieces being from four to ſix, or more, feet in length, and half as broad. They are then given to another perſon, who joins the pieces, by ſmearing part of them over with the viſcous juice of a berry, called tooo, which ſerves as a glue. Having been thus lengthened, they are laid over a large piece of wood, with a kind of ſtamp, made of a fibrous ſubſtance, pretty cloſely interwoven, placed beneath. They then take a bit of cloth, and dip it in a juice expreſſed from the bark of a tree called kokka, which they rub briſkly upon the piece that is making. This at once leaves a dull brown colour, and a dry gloſs upon its ſurface. In this manner they proceed, joining and ſtaining by degrees, till they produce a

piece

piece of cloth, of ſuch length and breadth as they want; generally leaving a border of a foot broad at the ſides, and longer at the ends, unſtained. Throughout the whole, if any parts of the original pieces are too thin, or have holes, which is often the caſe, they glue ſpare bits upon them, till they become of an equal thickneſs. When they want to produce a black colour, they mix the ſoot procured from an oily nut, called dooedooe, with the juice of the kokka, in different quantities, according to the propoſed depth of the tinge.

Next day was fixed upon by Mareewagee for giving a grand haiva, or entertainment, to which we were all invited. For this purpoſe a large ſpace had been cleared, before the temporary hut of this chief, near our poſt, as an area where the performances were to be exhibited. In the morning, great multitudes of the natives came in from the country, every one carrying a pole, about ſix feet long, upon his ſhoulder; and at each end of every pole a yam was ſuſpended. Theſe yams and poles were depoſited on each ſide of the area, ſo as to form two large heaps, decorated with different ſorts of ſmall fiſh, and piled up to the greateſt advantage. They were Mareewagee's preſent to Captain Clerke and me.

Every thing being thus prepared, about eleven o'clock they began to exhibit various dances, which they call mai. The muſic conſiſted, at firſt, of ſeventy men as a chorus, who ſat down; and amidſt them were placed three inſtruments, which we called drums, from their effect. The natives call them naffa. Theſe inſtruments produce a rude, though loud and powerful ſound.

The firſt dance conſiſted of four ranks, of twenty-four men each, holding in their hands a little, thin, light, wooden inſtrument, about two feet long, and in ſhape not unlike a ſmall oblong paddle. With theſe, which are called pagge, they made a great many different motions; all which were accompanied by correſponding attitudes of the body. Their motions were at firſt ſlow, but quickened as the drums beat faſter; and they recited ſentences, in a muſical tone, the whole time, which were anſwered by the chorus; but at the end of a ſhort ſpace they all joined, and finiſhed with a ſhout; then the rear rank dividing, ſhifted themſelves very ſlowly round each end, and meeting in the front, formed the firſt rank; the whole number continuing to recite the ſentences as before. The other ranks did the ſame ſucceſſively, till that, which at firſt was the front, became the rear; and their evolution continued in the ſame manner, till the laſt rank regained its firſt ſituation. They then began a much quicker dance, though ſlow at firſt, and ſung about ten minutes, when the whole body divided into two parts, retreated a little, and then approached, forming a ſort of circular figure, which finiſhed the dance.

In a ſhort time, ſeventy men ſat down as a chorus to another dance. This conſiſted of two ranks, of ſixteen perſons each, with young Too-bou at their head. Theſe danced, ſung, and twirled the pagge as before; but, in general, much quicker. A motion that met with particular approbation, was one in which they held the face aſide, as if aſhamed. The back rank cloſed before the front one, and that again reſumed its place, as in the two former dances. At

that

that inſtant, two men entered very haſtily, and exerciſed the clubs which they uſe in battle. They did this, by firſt twirling them in their hands, and making circular ſtrokes before them, with great force and quickneſs; but ſo ſkilfully managed, that, though ſtanding quite cloſe, they never interfered. To them ſucceeded a perſon with a ſpear, in the ſame haſty manner; looking about eagerly, as if in ſearch of ſomebody to throw it at. He then ran haſtily to one ſide of the crowd in the front, and put himſelf in a threatening attitude, as if he meant to ſtrike with his ſpear at one of them, bending the knee a little, and trembling, as it were with rage. He continued in this manner only a few ſeconds, when he moved to the other ſide, and having ſtood in the ſame poſture there, for the ſame ſhort time, retreated from the ground, as faſt as when he made his appearance; and various other evolutions were performed with much adroitneſs.

Theſe dances laſted from eleven till near three o'clock; and though they were, doubtleſs, intended to ſhew us a ſpecimen of their dexterity, vaſt numbers of their own people attended as ſpectators. Some of us computed that there were not leſs than ten or twelve thouſand within the compaſs of a quarter of a mile, drawn together, for the moſt part, by mere curioſity.

No pen can deſcribe the numerous actions and motions, the ſingularity of which was not greater than was the eaſe and gracefulneſs with which they were performed; and the whole was conducted with far better order than could have been expected in ſo large an aſſembly.

Early in the morning of the 18th, an accident happened that ſtrongly marked one of their cuſ-

Richter dd. et sc.

Athletic Amusement at the Island of Annamooka.

toms. A man got out of a canoe into the quarter gallery of the Reſolution, and ſtole from thence a pewter baſon. He was diſcovered, purſued, and brought along-ſide the ſhip. On this occaſion, three old women, who were in the canoe, made loud lamentations over the priſoner, beating their breaſts and faces in a moſt violent manner; and all this was done without ſhedding a tear.

This day, I beſtowed on Mareewagee ſome preſents, in return for thoſe we had received from him the day before; and as the entertainments, which he had then exhibited for our amuſement, called upon us to make ſome exhibition in our way, I ordered a party of marines to go through their exerciſe, on the ſpot where his dances had been performed; and in the evening, played off ſome fireworks at the ſame place. Poulaho, with all the principal chiefs, and a great number of people of all denominations were preſent. The platoon firing, which was executed tolerably well, ſeemed to give them pleaſure; but they were loſt in aſtoniſhment when they beheld our water rockets.

In expectation of this evening ſhow, the circle of natives about our tent being pretty large, they engaged the greateſt part of the afternoon, in boxing and wreſtling. When any of them chuſes to wreſtle, he gets up from one ſide of the ring, and croſſes the ground in a ſort of meaſured pace, clapping ſmartly on the elbow joint of one arm, which is bent, and produces a hollow ſound; that is reckoned the challenge. If no perſon comes out from the oppoſite ſide to engage him, he returns in the ſame manner and ſits down; but ſometimes ſtands clapping in the midſt of the ground, to provoke ſome one to come

out. If an opponent appears, they come together with marks of the greateſt good-nature, generally ſmiling and taking time to adjuſt the piece of cloth which is faſtened round the waiſt. Their combats ſeldom laſt long before one gives in. Some of our people ventured to contend with the natives in both theſe exerciſes; but were always worſted.

The animals which we had brought were all on ſhore. Knowing their thieviſh diſpoſition, I thought it prudent to declare my intention of leaving ſome of them behind, and even to make a diſtribution of them previouſly to my departure.

With this view, in the evening of the 19th, I aſſembled all the chiefs before our houſe, and my intended preſents to them were marked out. To Poulaho, the king, I gave a young Engliſh bull and cow; to Mareewagee, a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou, a horſe and a mare. As my deſign, to make ſuch a diſtribution, had been made known the day before, moſt of the people in the neighbourhood were then preſent. I inſtructed Omai to tell them that there were no ſuch animals within many months ſail of their iſland; that we had brought them, for their uſe, from that immenſe diſtance, at a vaſt trouble and expence; that therefore they muſt be careful not to kill any of them till they had multiplied to a numerous race; and laſtly, that they and their children ought to remember that they had received them from the men of Britain. He alſo explained to them their ſeveral uſes, and what elſe was neceſſary for them to know, or rather as far as he knew; for Omai was not very well verſed in ſuch things himſelf.

Next day I dined aſhore. The king ſat down

with

with us; but he neither ate nor drank. I found that this was owing to the preſence of a female, whom, as we afterward underſtood, had ſuperior rank to himſelf. As ſoon as this great perſonage had dined, ſhe ſtepped up to the king, who put his hands to her feet; and then ſhe retired. He immediately dipped his fingers into a glaſs of wine, and then received the obeiſance of all her followers. This was the ſingle inſtance we ever obſerved of his paying this mark of reverence to any perſon. At the king's deſire, I ordered ſome fireworks to be played off in the evening; but unfortunately being damaged, this exhibition did not anſwer expectation.

As no more entertainments were to be expected on either ſide, and the curioſity of the populace was, by this time, pretty well ſatisfied, moſt of them left us. We ſtill, however, had thieves about us; and encouraged by the negligence of our own people, we had continual inſtances of their depredations.

Some of the officers, belonging to both ſhips, who had made an excurſion into the interior parts of the iſland, without my leave, and indeed without my knowledge, returned this evening, after an abſence of two days. They had taken with them their muſkets, with the neceſſary ammunition, and ſeveral ſmall articles of the favourite commodities; all which the natives had the dexterity to ſteal from them, in the courſe of their expedition. Feenou and Poulaho, upon this occaſion, very juſtly obſerved, that if any of my people, at any time, wanted to go into the country, they ought to be acquainted with it; in which caſe they would ſend proper perſons along with them; and then they would be anſwerable for

their ſafety. Though I gave myſelf no trouble about the recovery of the things ſtolen upon this occaſion, moſt of them, through Feenou's interpoſition, were recovered; except one muſket and a few other articles of inferior value.

We had now recruited the ſhips with wood and water, and had finiſhed the repairs of our ſails. However, as an eclipſe of the ſun was to happen upon the 5th of July, and it was now the 25th of June, I reſolved to defer ſailing till that time had elapſed, in order to have a chance of obſerving it.

Having therefore ſome days of leiſure before me, a party of us, accompanied by Poulaho, ſet out early next morning, in a boat, for Mooa, the village where he and the other great men uſually reſide. As we rowed up the inlet, we met fourteen canoes fiſhing in company; in one of which was Poulaho's ſon. In each canoe was a triangular net, extended between two poles; at the lower end of which was a cod to receive and ſecure the fiſh. They had already caught ſome fine mullets; and they put about a dozen into our boat. I deſired to ſee their method of fiſhing; which they readily complied with. A ſhoal of fiſh was ſuppoſed to be upon one of the banks, which they inſtantly incloſed in a long net like a ſeine, or ſet-net. This the fiſhers, one getting into the water out of each boat, ſurrounded with the triangular nets in their hands, with which they ſcooped the fiſh out of the ſeine, or caught them as they attempted to leap over it.

Leaving the prince and his fiſhing party, we proceeded to the bottom of the bay. Here we obſerved a fiataoka, or burying place, which was much more extenſive, and ſeemingly of more

conſe-

conſequence, than any we had ſeen at the other iſlands. We were told that it belonged to the king. It conſiſted of three pretty large houſes, ſituated upon a riſing ground, with a ſmall one at a diſtance, all ranged longitudinally. They were covered and paved with fine pebbles, and the whole was incloſed by large flat ſtones of hard coral rock, properly hewn, placed on their edges; one of which ſtones meaſured twelve feet in length, two in breadth, and above one in thickneſs. Within one of theſe houſes were two rude wooden buſts of men. On enquiring what theſe images were intended for, we were told they were merely memorials of ſome chiefs who had been buried there, and not the repreſentations of any deity. In one of them was the carved head of an Otaheitean canoe, which had been driven aſhore on their coaſt, and depoſited here.

After we had refreſhed ourſelves, we made an excurſion into the country, attended by one of the king's miniſters. Our train was not great, as he would not ſuffer the rabble to follow us. He alſo obliged all thoſe whom we met upon our progreſs, to ſit down till we had paſſed; which is a mark of reſpect due only to their ſovereigns. By far the greateſt part of the country was cultivated, and planted with various ſorts of productions. There were many public and well-beaten roads, and abundance of foot paths leading to every part of the iſland. It is remarkable that when we were on the moſt elevated parts, at leaſt a hundred feet above the level of the ſea, we often met with the ſame coral rock which is found at the ſhore; and yet theſe very ſpots, with hardly any ſoil upon them, were covered with luxuri-

ant vegetation. We ſaw ſome ſprings, but the water was either ſtinking or brackiſh.

When we returned from our walk, which was not till the duſk of the evening, our ſupper was ready. It conſiſted of a baked hog, ſome fiſh, and yams, all excellently well cooked, after the method of theſe iſlands. As there was nothing to amuſe us after ſupper, we followed the cuſtom of the country, and lay down to ſleep, our beds being mats ſpread upon the floor, and cloth to cover us. The king, who had made himſelf very happy with ſome wine and brandy which we had brought, ſlept in the ſame houſe, as well as ſeveral others of the natives.

Early next morning, they began to prepare a bowl of kava. We had ſeen the drinking of this liquor ſometimes at the other iſlands; but by no means ſo frequently as here, where it ſeems to be the only forenoon employment of the principal people. The kava is a ſpecies of pepper, which they cultivate for this purpoſe, and eſteem it a valuable article. It ſeldom grows to more than a man's height; it branches conſiderably, with large heart-ſhaped leaves, and jointed ſtalks. The root is the only part that is uſed. They break it in pieces, ſcrape the dirt off with a ſhell, and then each begins and chews his portion, which he ſpits into a plantain leaf. The perſon who is to prepare the liquor, collects all theſe mouthfuls, and puts them into a large wooden diſh or bowl, adding as much water as will make it of a proper ſtrength. It is then well mixed up with hands; and ſome looſe ſtuff, of which mats are made, is thrown upon the ſurface. The immediate effect of this beverage is not perceptible on theſe people, who uſe it ſo frequently; but on ſome of ours,

who

who ventured to try it, though ſo naſtily prepared, it had the ſame power as ſpirits have in intoxicating them; or rather, it produced that kind of ſtupefaction, which is the conſequence of uſing opium, or other ſubſtances of that kind. I have ſeen them drink it ſeven times before noon, yet it is ſo diſagreeable, or at leaſt ſeems ſo, that the greateſt part of them cannot ſwallow it without making wry faces, and ſhuddering afterward.

When we got on board the ſhip, I found that every thing had been quiet during my abſence, not a theft having been committed; of which Feenou and Futtafaihe, the king's brother, who had undertaken the management of his countrymen, boaſted not a little. This ſhews what power the chiefs have, when they have the will to execute it; which we were ſeldom to expect, ſince whatever was ſtolen from us generally, if not always, was conveyed to them.

The good conduct of the natives was of ſhort duration; for the next day ſix or eight of them aſſaulted ſome of our people who were ſawing planks. They were fired upon by the ſentry; and one was ſuppoſed to be wounded, and three others taken. Theſe I kept confined all night; and did not diſmiſs them without puniſhment. After this, they behaved with a little more circumſpection, and gave us much leſs trouble. This change of behaviour was certainly occaſioned by the man being wounded; for before they had only been told the effect of fire-arms, but now they had felt it.

On the 30th I viſited Futtafaihe, where we ſpent the night; but we were a good deal diſturbed by a ſingular inſtance of luxury, in which their principal men indulge themſelves; that of being

being beat while they are aſleep. Two women ſat by Futtafaihe, and performed this operation, which is called tooge tooge, by beating briſkly on his body and legs with both fiſts, as on a drum, till he fell aſleep, and continuing it the whole night, with ſome ſhort intervals. When once the perſon is aſleep, they abate a little in the ſtrength and quickneſs of beating; but reſume it, if they obſerve any appearance of his awaking. In the morning we found that Futtafaihe's women relieved each other, and went to ſleep by turns. In any other country it would be ſuppoſed that ſuch a practice would put an end to all reſt; but here it certainly acts as an opiate; and is a ſtrong proof of what habit may effect. The noiſe of this, however, was not the only thing that kept us awake; for the people, who paſſed the night in the houſe, not only converſed amongſt each other frequently, as in the day; but all got up before it was light, and made a hearty meal on fiſh and yams, which were brought to them by a perſon who ſeemed to know very well the appointed time for this nocturnal refreſhment.

I had prolonged my ſtay at this iſland, on account of the approaching eclipſe; but on the 2d of July, on looking at the micrometer belonging to the Board of Longitude, I found ſome of the rack-work broken, and the inſtrument uſeleſs till repaired; which there was not time to do before it was intended to be uſed. Preparing now for our departure, I got on board, this day, all the cattle, poultry, and other animals, except ſuch as were deſtined to remain.

The next day we unmoored, that we might be ready to take the advantage of the firſt favourable wind. The king, who was one of our com-

pany

pany this day at dinner, I obſerved, took particular notice of the plates. This occaſioned me to make him an offer of one, either of pewter or of earthen ware. He choſe the firſt; and then began to tell us the ſeveral uſes to which he intended to apply it. Two of them are ſo extraordinary, that I cannot omit mentioning them. He ſaid, that whenever he ſhould have occaſion to viſit any of the other iſlands, he would leave this plate behind him at Tongataboo, as a ſort of repreſentative in his abſence, that the people might pay it the ſame obeiſance they do to himſelf in perſon. He was aſked what had been uſually employed for this purpoſe before he got this plate; and we had the ſatisfaction of learning from him, that this ſingular honour had hitherto been conferred on a wooden bowl in which he waſhed his hands. The other extraordinary uſe to which he meant to apply it, in the room of his wooden bowl, was to diſcover a thief. He ſaid, that when any thing was ſtolen, and the thief could not be found out, the people were all aſſembled together before him, when he waſhed his hands in water in this veſſel; after which it was cleaned, and then the whole multitude advanced, one after another, and touched it in the ſame manner that they touch his foot, when they pay him obeiſance. If the guilty perſon touched it, he died immediately upon the ſpot; not by violence, but by the hand of Providence; and if any one refuſed to touch it, his refuſal was a clear proof that he was the man.

In the morning of the 5th, the day of the eclipſe, the weather was dark and cloudy, with ſhowers of rain, ſo that we had little hopes of an obſervation. About nine o'clock, the ſun

broke

broke out at intervals for about half an hour; after which it was totally obſcured, till within a minute or two of the beginning of the eclipſe. We were all at our teleſcopes, viz. Mr. Bayly, Mr. King, Captain Clerke, Mr. Bligh, and myſelf. I loſt the obſervation, by not having a dark glaſs at hand, ſuitable to the clouds that were continually paſſing over the ſun; and Mr. Bligh had not got the ſun into the field of his teleſcope; ſo that the commencement of the eclipſe was only obſerved by the other three gentlemen.

The general appearance of the country conveys to the ſpectator an idea of the moſt exuberant fertility, whether we reſpect the places improved by art, or thoſe ſtill in a natural ſtate. At a diſtance, the ſurface ſeems entirely clothed with trees of various ſizes; the tall cocoa-palms are far from being the ſmalleſt ornament to any country that produces them.

Of cultivated fruits, the principal are the plantains and bread-fruit. There is plenty of excellent ſugar-cane.

The only quadruped, beſides hogs, are a few rats and ſome dogs. Fowls, which are of a large breed, are domeſticated here.

On July 6th, we were ready to ſail; but the wind being unfavourable, we were under the neceſſity of waiting two or three days. We took our final leave of Tongataboo on the 10th, and early in the morning of the ſecond day after, reached Middleburgh, or Eooa.

We had no ſooner anchored, than Taoofa, the chief, and ſeveral other natives, viſited us on board, and ſeemed to rejoice much at our arrival. This Taoofa knew me when I was here during my laſt voyage; conſequently, we were not

ſtrangers

ſtrangers to each other. In a little time I went aſhore with him, in ſearch of freſh water; the procuring of which was the chief object that brought me to Eooa. I was firſt conducted to a brackiſh ſpring, between low and high water mark, in the cove where we landed. Finding that we did not like this, our friends took us a little way into the iſland, where, in a deep chaſm, we found very good water. But rather than undertake the tedious talk of bringing it down to the ſhore, I reſolved to reſt contented with the ſupply the ſhips had got at Tongataboo.

I put aſhore, at this iſland, the ram and two ewes, of the Cape of Good Hope breed; intruſting them to the care of Taoofa, who ſeemed proud of his charge.

As we lay at anchor, this iſland bore a very different aſpect from any we had lately ſeen, and formed a moſt beautiful landſcape.

The 13th in the afternoon, a party of us made an excurſion to the higheſt part of the iſland, in order to have a full view of the country. From the elevation to which we had aſcended, we had a full view of the whole iſland, except a part of the ſouth point. The plains and meadows, of which there are here ſome of great extent, lie all on the north-weſt ſide; and, as they are adorned with tufts of trees, intermixed with plantations, they form a very beautiful landſcape, in every point of view. While I was ſurveying this delightful proſpect, I could not help flattering myſelf with the pleaſing idea, that ſome future navigators may, from the ſame ſtation, behold theſe meadows ſtocked with cattle, brought to theſe iſlands by the ſhips of England; and that the completion of this ſingle benevolent purpoſe, independently

dependently of all other conſiderations, would ſufficiently mark to poſterity that our voyages had not been uſeleſs to the general intereſts of humanity.

The next morning I planted a pine-apple, and ſowed the ſeeds of melons, and other vegetables, in the chief's plantation. I had ſome encouragement, indeed, to flatter myſelf that my endeavours of this kind would not be fruitleſs; for this day there was ſerved up, at my dinner, a diſh of turnips, being the produce of the ſeeds I had left during my laſt voyage.

I had fixed on the 15th for ſailing, till Taoofa preſſed me to ſtay a day or two longer, to receive a preſent he had prepared for me, conſiſting of two ſmall heaps of yams, and ſome fruit, which ſeemed to be collected by a kind of contribution, as at the other iſles. For this liberality I made an adequate return, and ſoon after weighed.

We now took leave of the Friendly Iſlands, after a ſtay of near three months; during which time we lived together in the moſt cordial friendſhip. Some accidental differences, it is true, now and then happened, owing to their great propenſity to thieving; but too often encouraged by the negligence of our own people. The time employed amongſt them was not thrown away. We expended very little of our ſea proviſions; ſubſiſting, in general, upon the produce of the iſlands while we ſtaid, and carrying away with us a quantity of refreſhments, ſufficient to laſt till our arrival at another ſtation, where we could depend upon a freſh ſupply. I was not ſorry, beſides, to have had an opportunity of bettering the condition of theſe good people, by leaving the uſeful animals before-mentioned among

among them; and, at the ſame time, thoſe deſigned for Otaheite, received freſh ſtrength in the paſtures of Tongataboo.

But beſides the immediate advantages which, both the natives of the Friendly Iſlands, and ourſelves, received by this viſit, future navigators from Europe, if any ſuch ever tread our ſteps, will profit by the knowledge I acquired of the geography of this part of the Pacific Ocean; and the more philoſophical reader, who loves to view human nature in new ſituations, will, perhaps, find matter of amuſement, if not of inſtruction, in the information which I have been enabled to convey to him concerning the inhabitants of this Archipelago.

According to the information that we received there, this Archipelago is very extenſive. Above one hundred and fifty iſlands were reckoned up to us by the natives, who made uſe of bits of leaves to aſcertain their number.

The natives of the Friendly Iſlands ſeldom exceed the common ſtature (though we have meaſured ſome who were above ſix feet) but are very ſtrong and well made; eſpecially as to their limbs. They are generally broad about the ſhoulders; and though the muſcular diſpoſition of the men, which ſeems a conſequence of much action, rather conveys the appearance of ſtrength than of beauty, there are ſeveral to be ſeen who are really handſome. We met with hundreds of truly European faces, and many genuine Roman noſes amongſt them. Their eyes and teeth are good; but the laſt, neither ſo remarkably white, nor ſo well ſet as are often found amongſt Indian nations.

The women are not ſo much diſtinguiſhed from the men by their features, as by their general form, which is, for the moſt part, deſtitute of that ſtrong, fleſhy firmneſs that appears in the latter. Though the features of ſome are ſo delicate, as not only to be a true index of their ſex, but to lay claim to a conſiderable ſhare of beauty and expreſſion, for the bodies and limbs of moſt of the females are well proportioned; and ſome abſolutely perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the moſt remarkable diſtinction in the women, is the uncommon ſmallneſs and delicacy of their fingers, which may be put in competition with the fineſt in Europe.

The general colour is a caſt deeper than the copper brown; but ſeveral of the men and women have a true olive complexion; and ſome of the laſt are even a great deal fairer. We ſaw a man and a boy at Hapaee, and a child at Anamooka, perfectly white. Such have been found amongſt all black nations; but I apprehend that their colour is rather a diſeaſe than a natural phenomenon.

Their countenances very remarkably expreſs the abundant mildneſs, or good-nature, which they poſſeſs; and are entirely free from that ſavage keenneſs which marks nations in a barbarous ſtate. They are frank, cheerful, and good-humoured, though ſometimes in the preſence of their chiefs, they put on a degree of gravity, and ſuch a ſerious air as becomes ſtiff and awkward, and has an appearance of reſerve.

Their peaceable diſpoſition is ſufficiently evinced from the friendly reception all ſtrangers have met with who have viſited them. Inſtead of offering to attack them openly, or clandeſtinely,

as has been the caſe with moſt of the inhabitants of theſe ſeas, they have never appeared in the ſmalleſt degree hoſtile; but on the contrary, like the moſt civilized people, have courted an intercourſe with their viſiters by bartering, which is the only medium that unites all nations in a ſort of friendſhip. Upon the whole, they ſeem poſſeſſed of many of the moſt excellent qualities that adorn the human mind; ſuch as induſtry, ingenuity, perſeverance, affability, and, perhaps, other virtues, which our ſhort ſtay with them might prevent our obſerving.

The only defect ſullying their character, that we know of, is a propenſity to thieving; to which we found thoſe of all ages, and both ſexes, addicted; and to an uncommon degree. Great allowances ſhould be made for the foibles of theſe poor natives of the Pacific Ocean, whoſe minds we overpowered with the glare of objects, equally new to them, as they were captivating. The thefts ſo frequently committed by the natives, of what we had brought along with us, may be ſaid to ariſe ſolely from an intenſe curioſity or deſire to poſſeſs ſomething which they had not been accuſtomed to before, and belonged to a ſort of people ſo different from themſelves.

Their hair is, in general, ſtraight, thick, and ſtrong; though a few have it buſhy or frizzled. The natural colour, I believe, almoſt without exception, is black; but the greateſt part of the men, and ſome of the women, have it ſtained of a brown, or purple colour, and a few of an orange caſt.

The dreſs of both men and women is the ſame; and conſiſts of a piece of cloth or matting (but moſtly the former) about two yards wide,

and two and a half long; at leaſt ſo long as to go once and a half round the waiſt, to which it is confined by a girdle or cord. It is double before, and hangs down like a petticoat, as low as the middle of the leg. The upper part of the garment, above the girdle, is plaited into ſeveral folds, ſo that, when unfolded, there is cloth ſufficient to draw up and wrap round the ſhoulders; which is very ſeldom done. The inferior ſort are ſatisfied with ſmall pieces; and very often wear nothing but a covering made of leaves of plants, or the maro, which is a narrow piece of cloth, or matting, like a ſaſh. This they paſs between the thighs and wrap round the waiſt; but the uſe of it is chiefly confined to the men.

The ornaments worn by both ſexes are necklaces, made of the fruit of the pandanus, and various ſweet-ſmelling flowers, which go under the general name of kahulla. Others are compoſed of ſmall ſhells, the wing and leg-bones of birds, ſhark's teeth, and other things; all which hang looſe upon the breaſt; rings of tortoiſeſhell on the fingers; and a number of theſe joined together as bracelets on the wriſts.

The employment of the women is of the eaſy kind, and, for the moſt part, ſuch as may be executed in the houſe. The manufacturing their cloth is wholly conſigned to their care.

The manufacture next in conſequence, and alſo within the department of the women, is that of their mats, which excel every thing I have ſeen at any other place, both as to their texture and their beauty.

The province allotted to the men, as might be expected, is far more laborious and extenſive than that of the women. Agriculture, architecture,

ture, boat-building, fiſhing, and other things that relate to navigation, are the objects of their care. Cultivated roots and fruits being their principal ſupport, this requires their conſtant attention to agriculture, which they purſue very diligently, and ſeem to have brought almoſt to as great perfection as circumſtances will permit. In planting the plantains and yams, they obſerve ſo much exactneſs that, which ever way you look, the rows preſent themſelves regular and complete.

It is remarkable, that theſe people, who, in many things, diſplay much taſte and ingenuity, ſhould ſhew little of either in building their houſes. Thoſe of the lower people are poor huts, and very ſmall; thoſe of the better ſort are larger and more comfortable. The dimenſions of one of a middling ſize, are about thirty feet long, twenty broad, and twelve high. Their houſe is, properly ſpeaking, a thatched roof or ſhed, ſupported by poſts and rafters, diſpoſed in a very judicious manner. The floor is raiſed with earth ſmoothed, and covered with ſtrong thick matting, and kept very clean. Their whole furniture conſiſts of a bowl or two, in which they make kava; a few gourds; cocoa-nut ſhells; and ſome ſmall wooden ſtools, which ſerve them for pillows.

Their weapons are clubs of different ſorts, (in the ornamenting of which they ſpend much time) ſpears, and darts. They have alſo bows and arrows; but theſe ſeemed to be deſigned only for amuſement, ſuch as ſhooting at birds, and not for military purpoſes.

They ſeem to have no ſet time for meals. They go to bed as ſoon as it is dark, and riſe with the dawn in the morning.

Their private diverſions are chiefly ſinging, dancing, and muſic, performed by the women. The dancing of the men has a thouſand different motions with the hands, to which we are entire ſtrangers; and they are performed with an eaſe and grace which are not to be deſcribed but by thoſe who have ſeen them.

Whether their marriages be made laſting by any kind of ſolemn contract, we could not determine with preciſion; but it is certain, that the bulk of the people ſatisfied themſelves with one wife. The chiefs, however, have commonly ſeveral women; though ſome of us were of opinion, that there was only one that was looked upon as the miſtreſs of the family.

Nothing can be a greater proof of the humanity of theſe people, than the concern they ſhew for the dead. They beat their teeth with ſtones, ſtrike a ſhark's tooth into the head till the blood flows in ſtreams, and thruſt ſpears into the inner part of the thigh, into their ſides, below the armpits, and through the cheeks into the mouth. All theſe operations convey an idea of ſuch rigorous diſcipline, as muſt require an uncommon degree of affection, or the groſſeſt ſuperſtition, to exact. It ſhould be obſerved, however, that the more painful operations are only practiſed on account of the death of thoſe moſt nearly connected. The common people are interred in no particular ſpot.

Their long and general mourning proves that they conſider death as a very great evil. And this is confirmed by a very odd cuſtom which they practiſe to avert it. They ſuppoſe that the Deity will accept of the little finger, as a ſort of ſacrifice efficacious enough to procure the recovery

covery of their health. There was ſcarcely one in ten of them whom we did not find thus mutilated, in one or both hands.

They ſeem to have little conception of future puniſhment. They believe, however, that they are juſtly puniſhed upon earth; and conſequently uſe every method to render their divinities propitious. The Supreme Author of moſt things they call Kallafootonga; who, they ſay, is a female, reſiding in the ſky, and directing the thunder, wind, rain, and in general all the changes of weather. They believe that when ſhe is angry with them, the productions of the earth are blaſted; that many things are deſtroyed by lightning; and that they themſelves are afflicted with ſickneſs and death, as well as their hogs and other animals. When this anger abates, they ſuppoſe that every thing is reſtored to its natural order. They alſo admit a plurality of Deities, though all inferior to Kallafootonga. But their notions of the power, and other attributes of theſe beings, are ſo very abſurd, that they ſuppoſe they have no farther concern with them after death.

They have, however, very proper ſentiments about the immateriality and the immortality of the ſoul. They call it life, the living principle; or, what is more agreeable to their notions of it, an Otooa; that is a divinity, or inviſible being.

Of the nature of their government, we know no more than the general outline. Some of them told us that the power of the king is unlimited, and that the life and property of the ſubject are at his diſpoſal; and we ſaw inſtances enough to prove that the lower order of people have no property, nor ſafety for their perſons, but at the will

will of the chief, to whom they reſpectively belong.

The language of the Friendly Iſlands has the greateſt affinity imaginable to that of New Zealand, of Wateeoo, and Mangeea; and conſequently to that of Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands.

Nothing material occurred for ſome time after we left the Friendly Iſlands. In the morning of the 8th of Auguſt, land was ſeen, nine or ten leagues diſtant. As we approached, we ſaw it every where guarded by a reef of coral rock, extending in ſome places a full mile from the land, and a high ſurf breaking upon it. We alſo obſerved people on ſeveral parts of the coaſt; and in a little time after we had reached the lee-ſide of the iſland, we ſaw them launch two canoes, into which above a dozen men got, and paddled towards us.

I now ſhortened ſail, as well to give theſe canoes time to come up with us, as to ſound for anchorage. The canoes having advanced to about the diſtance of a piſtol-ſhot from the ſhip, they ſtopped. Omai was employed, as he uſually had been on ſuch occaſions, to uſe all his eloquence to prevail on the men in them to come nearer; but no entreaties could induce them to truſt themſelves within our reach. They kept eagerly pointing to the ſhore with their paddles, and calling to us to go thither; and ſeveral of their countrymen, who ſtood upon the beach, held up ſomething white, which we conſidered alſo as an invitation to land. But I did not think proper to riſk loſing the advantage of a fair wind, for the ſake of examining an iſland which appeared to be of little conſequence. For this reaſon I made ſail to the north,

but

but not without getting from them, during their vicinity to our ſhip, the name of their iſland, which they called Toobouai.

At day-break, in the morning of the 12th, we ſaw the Iſland of Maitea. Soon after, Otaheite made its appearance.

When we firſt drew near the iſland, ſeveral canoes came off to the ſhip, each conducted by two or three men. But, as they were common fellows, Omai took no particular notice of them, nor they of him. At length, a chief, whom I had known before, named Ootee, and Omai's brother-in-law, who chanced to be now at this corner of the iſland, and three or four more perſons, all of whom knew Omai, came on board. Yet there was nothing either tender or ſtriking in their meeting. On the contrary, there ſeemed to be a perfect indifference on both ſides, till Omai having taken his brother down into the cabin, opened the drawer where he kept his red feathers, and gave him a few. This being preſently known amongſt the reſt of the natives upon deck, the face of affairs was entirely turned, and Ootee, who would hardly ſpeak to Omai before, now begged that they might be friends, and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and confirmed it with a preſent of red feathers; and Ootee, by way of return, ſent aſhore for a hog. But it was evident to every one of us, that it was not the man, but his property, they were in love with. Such was Omai's firſt reception among his countrymen. I own I never expected it would be otherwiſe; but ſtill I was in hopes that the valuable cargo of preſents, with which the liberality of his friends in England had loaded him, would be the means of raiſing

him

him into conſequence, and of making him reſpected, and even courted by the firſt perſons throughout the extent of the Society Iſlands. This could not but have happened, had he conducted himſelf with any degree of prudence. But inſtead of it, I am ſorry to ſay, that he paid too little regard to the repeated advice of thoſe who wiſhed him well, and ſuffered himſelf to be duped by every deſigning knave.

The important news, of red feathers being on board our ſhips, having been conveyed on ſhore by Omai's friends, day had no ſooner begun to break next morning, than we were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people bringing hogs and fruit to market. At firſt, a quantity of feathers, not greater than what might be got from a tom-tit, would purchaſe a hog of forty or fifty pounds weight. But as almoſt every body in the ſhips was poſſeſſed of ſome of this precious article of trade, it fell in its value above five hundred per cent. before night.

Soon after we had anchored, Omai's ſiſter came on board to ſee him. I was happy to obſerve that, much to the honour of them both, their meeting was marked with expreſſions of the tendereſt affection, eaſier to be conceived than to be deſcribed.

This moving ſcene having cloſed, and the ſhip being properly moored, Omai and I went on ſhore. My firſt object was to pay a viſit to a man, whom my friend repreſented as a very extraordinary perſonage indeed, for he ſaid, that he was the god of Bolabola. We found him ſeated under one of thoſe ſmall awnings, which they uſually carry in their larger canoes. He was an elderly man, and had loſt the uſe of his limbs;

ſo

ſo that he was carried from place to place upon a hand-barrow. From Omai's account of this perſon, I expected to have ſeen ſome religious adoration paid to him; but, excepting ſome young plantain trees that lay before him, and upon the awning under which he ſat, I could obſerve nothing by which he might be diſtinguiſhed from their other chiefs. Omai preſented to him a tuft of red feathers, tied to the end of a ſmall ſtick; but after a little converſation on indifferent matters with this Bolabola man, his attention was drawn to an old woman, the ſiſter of his mother. She was already at his feet, and had bedewed them plentifully with tears of joy.

I left him with the old lady, in the midſt of a number of people, who had gathered round him, and went to view a houſe, ſaid to be built by ſtrangers ſince I was here before. By an inſcription, I found it was erected by ſome Spaniards that had been lately there in two ſhips from Lima.

When I returned, I found Omai holding forth to a large company; and it was with ſome difficulty that he could be got away to accompany me on board; where I had an important affair to ſettle, in regard to the ſtated allowance of ſpirituous liquors; and I had the ſatisfaction to find, that the crews of both ſhips unanimouſly conſented to an abridgment in the uſual quantity, while at this place; that they might not be under the neceſſity of being put to a ſhort allowance in a cold climate.

The next day we began ſome neceſſary operations. I alſo put on ſhore the bull, cows, horſes, and ſheep, and appointed two men to look after them

them while grazing; for I did not intend to leave any of them at this part of the iſland.

During the two following days it hardly ever ceaſed raining. The natives, nevertheleſs, came to us from every quarter, the news of our arrival having rapidly ſpread. On the 17th, Omai and I went aſhore to pay a formal viſit to a young chief, named Waheiadooa, who had come down to the beach. On this occaſion, Omai, aſſiſted by ſome of his friends, dreſſed himſelf, not after the Engliſh faſhion, nor that of Otaheite, nor that of Tongataboo, nor in the dreſs of any country upon earth; but in a ſtrange medley of all that he was poſſeſſed of.

On our landing, Etary, or the god of Bolabola, carried on a hand-barrow, attended us to a large houſe, where he was ſet down; and we ſeated ourſelves on each ſide of him. I cauſed a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be ſpread out before us, on which I laid the preſents I intended to make. Preſently the young chief came, attended by his mother, and ſeveral principal men, who all ſeated themſelves at the other end of the cloth, facing us. Then a man, who ſat by me, made a ſpeech, conſiſting of ſhort and ſeparate ſentences; part of which was dictated by thoſe about him. He was anſwered by one from the oppoſite ſide near the chief. Etary ſpoke next; then Omai; and both of them were anſwered from the ſame quarter. Theſe orations were entirely about my arrival and connections with them. The perſon who ſpoke laſt told me, amongſt other things, that he was authoriſed to make a formal ſurrender of the province of Tiaraboo to me, and of every thing in it, which marks very plainly, that theſe people are no ſtrangers to the policy of accommodating

themſelves

themſelves to preſent circumſtances. At length the young chief was directed by his attendants to come and embrace me; and, by way of confirming this treaty of friendſhip, we exchanged names. The ceremony being cloſed, he and his friends accompanied me on board to dinner.

Having taken in a freſh ſupply of water, and finiſhed all our other neceſſary operations, on the 22d I brought off the cattle and ſheep, and made ready for ſea.

On the 23d, we got under ſail, and ſteered for Matavai Bay, where the Reſolution anchored the ſame evening. But the Diſcovery did not get in till the next morning.

About nine o'clock in the morning, Otoo, the king of the whole iſland, attended by a great number of canoes full of people, came from Oparre, his place of reſidence, and ſent a meſſage on board, expreſſing his deſire to ſee me. Accordingly I landed, accompanied by Omai and ſome of the officers. We found a prodigious number of people aſſembled on this occaſion, and in the midſt of them was the king, attended by his father, his two brothers, and three ſiſters. I went up firſt and ſaluted him, followed by Omai, who kneeled and embraced his legs. He had prepared himſelf for this ceremony, by dreſſing in his very beſt ſuit of clothes, and behaved with a great deal of reſpect and modeſty. Nevertheleſs, very little notice was taken of him. Perhaps envy had ſome ſhare in producing this cold reception. He made the chief a preſent of a large piece of red feathers, and about two or three yards of gold cloth; and I gave him a ſuit of fine linen, a gold-laced hat, ſome tools, and, what was of more value than all the other arti-

Bayerische Staatsbibliothek München

cles, a quantity of red feathers, and one of the bonnets in uſe at the Friendly Iſlands.

After the hurry of this viſit was over, the king, and the whole royal family, accompanied me on board, followed by ſeveral canoes, laden with all kinds of proviſions, in quantity ſufficient to have ſerved the companies of both ſhips for a week. Soon after the king's mother, who had not been preſent at the firſt interview, came on board, bringing with her a quantity of proviſions and cloth, which ſhe divided between me and Omai. For although he was but little noticed at firſt by his countrymen, they no ſooner gained the knowledge of his riches, than they began to court his friendſhip. I encouraged this as much as I could; for it was my wiſh to fix him with Otoo. As I intended to leave all my European animals at this iſland, I thought he would be able to give ſome inſtruction about the management of them, and their uſe. Beſides I knew and ſaw that the farther he was from his native iſland, he would be the better reſpected. But unfortunately, poor Omai rejected my advice, and conducted himſelf in ſo imprudent a manner, that he ſoon loſt the friendſhip of Otoo, and of every other perſon of note in Otaheite.

As ſoon as we had dined, a party of us accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with us the poultry with which we were to ſtock the iſland. Theſe I left at Oparre, in the poſſeſſion of Otoo; and the geeſe and ducks began to breed before we ſailed. We found there a gander, which the natives told us was the ſame that Captain Wallis had given to Oberea ten years before; ſeveral goats; and the Spaniſh bull, which they kept tied to a tree, near Otoo's houſe. I never ſaw a finer

animal

animal of his kind. He was now the property of Etary, and had been brought from Oheitepeha to this place, in order to be ſhipped for Bolabola. But it paſſes my comprehenſion how they can contrive to carry him in one of their canoes. If we had not arrived, it would have been of little conſequence who had the property of him, as, without a cow, he could be of no uſe; and none had been left with him. Next day I put aſhore three cows and a horſe, a mare and ſheep.

Having thus diſpoſed of theſe paſſengers, I found myſelf lightened of a very heavy burthen. The trouble and vexation that attended the bringing this living cargo thus far, is hardly to be conceived. But the ſatisfaction that I felt in having been ſo fortunate as to fulfil his majeſty's humane deſign, in ſending ſuch valuable animals to ſupply the wants of two worthy nations, ſufficiently recompenſed me for the many anxious hours I had paſſed, before this ſubordinate object of my voyage could be carried into execution.

As I intended to make ſome ſtay here, we ſet up the two obſervatories on Matavai Point. Adjoining to them, two tents were pitched, for the reception of a guard, and of ſuch people as it might be neceſſary to leave on ſhore in different departments. At this ſtation, I intruſted the command to Mr. King; who, at the ſame time, attended the obſervations for aſcertaining the going of the time-keeper, and other purpoſes.

On the 26th, I had a piece of ground cleared for a garden, and planted it with ſeveral articles. Some melons, potatoes, and two pine-apple plants, were in a fair way of ſucceeding before we left the place. I had brought from the Friendly Iſlands ſeveral ſhaddock trees. Theſe I alſo planted

here; and they can hardly fail of ſucceſs, unleſs their growth ſhould be checked by the ſame premature curioſity which deſtroyed a vine planted by the Spaniards at Oheitepeha. A number of the natives got together to taſte the firſt fruit it bore; but, as the grapes were ſtill ſour, they conſidered it as little better than poiſon, and it was unanimouſly determined to tread it under foot. In that ſtate, Omai found it by chance, and was overjoyed at the diſcovery; for he had a full confidence, that if he had but grapes, he could eaſily make wine. Accordingly he had ſeveral ſlips cut off from the tree, to carry with him; and we pruned and put in order the remains of it. Probably, grown wiſe by Omai's inſtructions, they may now ſuffer the fruit to grow to perfection, and not paſs ſo haſty a ſentence upon it again.

We found here the young man whom we called Oedidee, but whoſe real name is Heete-heete. I had carried him from Ulietea in 1773, and brought him back in 1774; after he had viſited the Friendly Iſlands, New Zealand, Eaſter Iſland, and the Marqueſes, and been on board my ſhip, in that extenſive navigation, about ſeven months. He was tenacious of his good-breeding, and 'yes, Sir,' or, 'if you pleaſe, Sir,' were frequently repeated by him. Heete-heete, who is a native of Bolabola, had arrived in Otaheite about three months before, with no other intention, that we could learn, than to gratify his curioſity, or perhaps ſome other favourite paſſion. It was evident, however, that he preferred the modes, and even garb of his countrymen, to ours. For though I gave him ſome clothes, which our Admiralty Board had been pleaſed to ſend for his uſe, (to which I added a cheſt of tools, and a few

other

ther articles, as a preſent from myſelf) he declined wearing them after a few days. This inſtance may be urged as a proof of the ſtrong propenſity natural to man, of returning to habits acquired at an early age, and only interrupted by accident.

In the morning of the 27th, a man came from Oheitepeha, and told us that two Spaniſh ſhips had anchored in that bay the night before; and, in confirmation of this intelligence, he produced a piece of coarſe blue cloth, which he ſaid he got out of one of the ſhips; and which, indeed, to appearance, was almoſt quite new. He added, that Mateema was in one of the ſhips; and that they were to come down to Matavai in a day or two. Some other circumſtances which he mentioned gave the ſtory ſo much the air of truth, that I diſpatched Lieutenant Williamſon in a boat to look into Oheitepeha Bay; and, in the mean time, I put the ſhips into a proper poſture of defence. For though England and Spain were in peace when I left Europe, for aught I knew, a different ſcene might by this time have opened. However, on farther enquiry, the fellow had impoſed upon us; and this was confirmed by Williamſon's report, as ſoon as he returned.

Hitherto the attention of Otoo and his people had been confined to us; but next morning a new ſcene of buſineſs opened, by the arrival of ſome meſſengers from Eimeo, with intelligence that the people in that iſland were in arms; and that Otoo's partiſans there had been worſted, and obliged to retreat to the mountains. The quarrel between the two iſlands, which commenced in 1774, had, it ſeems, partly ſubſiſted ever ſince. The formidable armament, which I ſaw at that

time, had ſailed ſoon after I then left Otaheite; but the malecontents of Eimeo had made ſo ſtout a reſiſtance, that the fleet had returned without effecting much; and now another expedition was neceſſary.

On the arrival of theſe meſſengers, all the chiefs, who happened to be at Matavai, aſſembled at Otoo's houſe, where I actually was at the time, and had the honour to be admitted into their council. One of the meſſengers opened the buſineſs of the aſſembly, in a ſpeech of conſiderable length, in order to excite the aſſembled chiefs of Otaheite to arm on the occaſion. This opinion was combated by others who were againſt commencing hoſtilities. At length the party for war prevailed. Otoo, during the whole debate, remained ſilent. Thoſe of the council, who were for proſecuting the war, applied to me for my aſſiſtance; and all of them wanted to know what part I would take. Omai was ſent for to be my interpreter; but, as he could not be found, I was obliged to ſpeak for myſelf, and told them, as well as I could, that as the people of Eimeo had never offended me, I could not think myſelf at liberty to engage in hoſtilities againſt them. With this declaration they ſeemed ſatisfied.

On our enquiring into the cauſe of the war, we were told that ſome years ago a brother of Waheadooa, of Tieraboo, was ſent to Eimeo, at the requeſt of Maheine, a popular chief of that iſland, to be their king; but that he had not been there a week before Maheine having cauſed him to be killed, ſet up for himſelf in oppoſition to Tierataboonooe, his ſiſter's ſon, who became the lawful heir; or elſe had been pitched upon by the people

of

of Otaheite, to ſucceed to the government on the death of the other.

Towha, a man of much weight in the iſland, happened not to be at Matavai at this time. It however appeared that he was no ſtranger to what was tranſacted; and that he entered with more ſpirit into the affair than any other chief. For, early in the morning of the 1ſt of September, a meſſenger arrived from him to acquaint Otoo, that he had killed a man to be ſacrificed to the Eatooa, to implore the aſſiſtancc of the god againſt Eimeo. This act of worſhip was to be performed at the great morai at Attahooroo; and Otoo's preſence, it ſeems, was abſolutely neceſſary on that ſolemn occaſion.

I propoſed to Otoo that I might be allowed to accompany him. To this he readily conſented; and we immediately ſet out in my boat, with my old friend Potatou, Mr. Anderſon, and Mr. Webber; Omai following in a canoe.

As ſoon as we landed at Attahooroo, which was about two o'clock in the afternoon. Otoo expreſſed his deſire that the ſeamen might be ordered to remain in the boat; and that Mr. Anderſon Mr. Webber, and myſelf, might take off our hats as ſoon as we ſhould come to the morai, to which we immediately proceeded, attended by a great many men and ſome boys, but not one woman. We found four prieſts, and their attendants, or aſſiſtants, waiting for us.

The ceremonies now began. One of the prieſts' attendants brought a young plantain tree, and laid it down before Otoo. One of the prieſts, ſeated at the morai, now began a long prayer. During this prayer, a man who ſtood by the officiating prieſt, held in his hands two bundles,

ſeemingly

ſeemingly of cloth. In one of them, as we afterwards found, was the royal maro; and the other, if I may be allowed the expreſſion, was the ark of the Eatooa. As ſoon as the prayer was ended, the prieſts at the morai, with their attendants, went and ſat down by thoſe upon the beach, carrying with them the two bundles. Here they renewed their prayers. The dead body was now taken out of a canoe, and laid upon the beach, with the feet to the ſea. The prieſts placed themſelves around it, ſome ſitting and others ſtanding; and one, or more of them, repeated ſentences for about ten minutes. It was now laid in a parallel direction with the ſea-ſhore. One of the prieſts then, ſtanding at the feet of it, pronounced a long prayer, in which he was at times joined by the others, each holding in his hand a tuft of red feathers. In the courſe of this prayer ſome hair was pulled off the head of the ſacrifice, and the left eye taken out, both which were preſented to Otoo wrapped up in a green leaf. He did not however touch it, but gave, to the man who preſented it, the tuft of feathers which he had received from Towha. This, with the hair and eye, was carried back to the prieſts. During ſome part of this laſt ceremony, a king-fiſher making a noiſe in the trees, Otoo turned to me, ſaying, "That is the Eatooa!" and ſeemed to look upon it to be a good omen.

The body was then carried a little way with its head toward the morai, and laid under a tree, near which were fixed three broad thin pieces of wood, differently but rudely carved. The bundles of cloth were laid on a part of the morai, and the tufts of red feathers were placed at the feet of the ſacrifice, round which the prieſts took their

ſtations,

ſtations, and we were now allowed to go as near as we pleaſed. He, who ſeemed to be the chief prieſt, ſat at a ſmall diſtance, and ſpoke for a quarter of an hour, but with different tones and geſtures, ſo that he ſeemed to expoſtulate with, or queſtion the dead perſon, to whom he conſtantly addreſſed himſelf. He then chaunted a prayer, which laſted near half an hour, in a whining, melancholy tone, accompanied by two other prieſts, and in which Potatou and ſome others joined. In the courſe of this prayer ſome more hair was plucked by the prieſt from the head of the corpſe, and put upon one of the bundles. After this the chief prieſt prayed alone, holding in his hand the feathers which came from Towha. When he had finiſhed, he gave them to another, who prayed in like manner. Then all the tufts of feathers were laid upon the bundles of cloth, which cloſed the ceremony at this place.

The corpſe was then carried up to the moſt conſpicuous part of the morai, with the feathers, the two bundles of cloth, and the drums, the laſt of which beat ſlowly. The feathers and bundles were laid againſt the pile of ſtones, and the corpſe at the foot of them. The prieſts, having again ſeated themſelves round it, renewed their prayers, while ſome of their attendants dug a hole about two feet deep, into which they threw the unhappy victim, and covered it over with earth and ſtones. While they were putting him into the grave, a boy ſqueaked aloud, and Omai ſaid to me that it was the Eatooa. During this time a fire having been made, a dog was produced and killed, by twiſting his neck and ſuffocating him. The hair was ſinged off, and the entrails taken out and thrown into the fire, where they were left to

conſume.

conſume. The body of the dog, after being beſmeared with blood, and dried over the fire, was, with the liver and heart, carried and laid down before the prieſts, who ſat praying round the grave. They continued their ejaculations over the dog for ſome time, while two men, at intervals, beat on two drums very loud, and a boy ſcreamed as before in a loud ſhrill voice, three different times. This, as we were told, was to invite Eatooa to feaſt on the banquet that they had prepared for him. As ſoon as the prieſts had ended their prayers, the carcaſe of the dog, with what belonged to it, was laid on a ſcaffold, about ſix feet high, that ſtood cloſe by, on which lay the remains of two other dogs, and of two pigs, which had lately been ſacrificed, and at this time emitted an intolerable ſtench. This kept us at a greater diſtance than would otherwiſe have been required of us. When the dog was put upon the ſcaffold, the prieſts and attendants gave a kind of ſhout, which cloſed the ceremonies for the preſent. The day being now alſo cloſed, we were conducted to a houſe belonging to Potatou, where we were entertained and lodged for the night. Some other religious rites were performed next day; but on this ſubject we think we have ſaid enough to ſatisfy our readers, perhaps to diſguſt them.

The unhappy victim, offered to the object of their worſhip, upon this occaſion, ſeemed to be a middle-aged man; and, as we were told, was a towtow; that is, one of the loweſt claſs of the people. But, after all my enquiries, I could not learn that he had been pitched upon, on account of any particular crime, committed by him, meriting death. Having had an opportunity of examining

ing the appearance of the body of the poor ſufferer, now offered up, I could obſerve that it was bloody about the head and face, and a good deal bruiſed upon the right temple; which marked the manner of his being killed. And we were told, that he had been privately knocked on the head with a ſtone.

Whenever any one of the great chiefs thinks a human ſacrifice neceſſary, on any particular emergency, he pitches upon the victim. Some of his truſty ſervants are then ſent, who fall upon him ſuddenly, and put him to death with a club, or by ſtoning him. The king is next acquainted with it, whoſe preſence, at the ſolemn rites that follow, is, as I was told, abſolutely neceſſary; and, indeed, on the preſent occaſion, we could obſerve that Otoo bore a principal part.

It is much to be regretted, that a practice, ſo horrid in its own nature, and ſo deſtructive of that inviolable right of ſelf-preſervation, which every one is born with, ſhould be found ſtill exiſting. Though we ſhould ſuppoſe that never more than one perſon is ſacrificed on any ſingle occaſion at Otaheite, it is more than probable that theſe occaſions happen ſo frequently, as to make a ſhocking waſte of the human race; for I counted no leſs than forty-nine ſkulls of former victims, lying before the morai, where we ſaw one more added to the number. And, as none of thoſe ſkulls had as yet ſuffered any conſiderable change from the weather, it may hence be inferred that no great length of time had elapſed ſince at leaſt this conſiderable number of unhappy wretches had been offered upon this altar of blood.

Human ſacrifices, however, are not the only barbarous cuſtom we find ſtill prevailing amongſt

this benevolent, humane people. For, beſides cutting out the jaw-bones of their enemies, ſlain in battle, which they carry about as trophies, they in ſome meaſure, offer their bodies as a ſacrifice to the Eatooa. Soon after a battle, in which they have been victors, they collect all the dead that have fallen into their hands, and bring them to the morai, where, with a great deal of ceremony, they dig a hole, and bury them all in it, as ſo many offerings to the gods; but their ſkulls are never after taken up.

Before we parted, we were aſked, if the ſolemnity, at which we had been preſent, anſwered our expectations; what opinion we had of its efficacy; and whether we performed ſuch acts of worſhip in our own country? During the celebration of the horrid ceremony, we had preſerved a profound ſilence; but as ſoon as it was cloſed, had made no ſcruple in expreſſing our ſentiments very freely about it to Otoo, and thoſe who attended him; of courſe, therefore, I could not conceal my deteſtation of it, in a ſubſequent converſation with Towha. Omai was made uſe of as our interpreter; and he entered into our arguments with ſo much ſpirit, that this chief ſeemed to be in great wrath, eſpecially when he was told, that if he had put a man to death in England, as he had done here, his rank would not have protected him from being hanged for it. Upon this he exclaimed, maeno! maeno! (vile! vile!) and would not hear another word. During this debate many of the natives were preſent, chiefly the attendants and ſervants of Towha himſelf; and when Omai began to explain the puniſhment that would be inflicted in England upon the greateſt man, if he killed the meaneſt ſervant,

they

they ſeemed to liſten with great attention; and were, probably, of a different opinion from that of their maſter on this ſubject.

On the 4th, a party of us dined aſhore with Omai, who gave excellent fare, conſiſting of fiſh, fowls, pork, and puddings. After dinner I attended Otoo, who had been one of the party, back to his houſe, where I found all his ſervants very buſy, getting a quantity of proviſions ready for me. Amongſt other articles there was a large hog, which they killed in my preſence. There was alſo a large pudding, the whole proceſs in making which I ſaw. It was compoſed of bread-fruit, ripe plantains, taro, and palm or pandanus nuts, each raſped, ſcraped, or beat up fine, and baked by itſelf. A quantity of juice, preſſed from cocoa-nut kernels, was put into a large tray, or wooden veſſel. The other articles, hot from the oven, were depoſited in this veſſel, and a few hot ſtones were alſo put in to make the contents ſimmer. Three or four men made uſe of ſticks to ſtir the ſeveral ingredients, till they were incorporated one with another, and the juice of the cocoa-nut was turned to oil, ſo that the whole maſs, at laſt, became of the conſiſtency of a haſty-pudding. Some of theſe puddings are excellent; and few that we make in England equal them. Otoo's hog being baked, and the pudding, which I have deſcribed, being made, they, together with two living hogs and a quantity of bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, were put into a canoe, and ſent on board my ſhip, followed by myſelf and all the royal family.

In the evening of the 7th we played off ſome fireworks before a great concourſe of people. Some were highly entertained with the exhibi-

tion; but by far the greater number of ſpectators were terribly frightened, inſomuch that it was with difficulty we could prevail upon them to keep together, to ſee the end of the ſhow. A table-rocket was the laſt. It flew off the table and diſperſed the whole crowd in a moment; even the moſt reſolute among them fled with precipitation.

Otoo was not more attentive to ſupply our wants by a ſucceſſion of preſents, than he was to contribute to our amuſement, by a ſucceſſion of diverſions. A party of us having gone down to Oparre on the 10th, he treated us with what may be called a play. His three ſiſters were the actreſſes; and the dreſſes that they appeared in were new and elegant; that is, more ſo than we had uſually met with at any of theſe iſlands.

In the evening we returned from Oparre, where we left Otoo, and all the royal family; and I ſaw none of them till the 12th; when all, but the chief himſelf, paid me a viſit. He, as they told me, was gone to Attahooroo, to aſſiſt this day at another human ſacrifice, which the chief of Tiaraboo had ſent thither to be offered up at the morai. This ſecond inſtance, within the courſe of a few days, was too melancholy a proof how numerous the victims of this bloody ſuperſtition are amongſt this humane people. I would have been preſent at this ſacrifice too, had I known of it in time, for now it was too late.

The following evening Otoo returned from exerciſing this moſt diſagreeable of all his duties as ſovereign; and the next day, being now honoured with his company, Captain Clerke and I, mounted on horſeback, took a ride round the plain of Matavai, to the very great ſurpriſe of a great

train

train of people who attended on the occaſion, gazing upon us with as much aſtoniſhment as if we had been centaurs. Omai, indeed, had once or twice before this attempted to get on horſe-back, but he had as often been thrown off before he could contrive to ſeat himſelf, ſo that this was the firſt time they had ſeen any body ride a horſe. What Captain Clerke and I began, was, after this, repeated every day while we ſtaid, by one or another of our people. And yet the curioſity of the natives continued ſtill unabated. They were exceedingly delighted with theſe animals, after they had ſeen the uſe that was made of them; and, as far as I could judge, they conveyed to them a better idea of the greatneſs of other nations, than all the other novelties put together, that their European viſiters had carried amongſt them.

In the morning of the 18th, Mr. Anderſon, myſelf, and Omai, went again with Otoo to Oparre, and took with us the ſheep which I intended to leave upon the iſland, conſiſting of an Engliſh ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes, all which I gave to Otoo.

After dining with Otoo, we returned to Matavai, leaving him at Oparre. This day, and alſo the 19th, we were very ſparingly ſupplied with fruit. Otoo hearing of this, he and his brother, who had attached himſelf to Captain Clerke, came from Oparre, between nine and ten o'clock in the evening, with a large ſupply for both ſhips. This marked his humane attention more ſtrongly than any thing he had hitherto done for us. The next day all the royal family came with preſents; ſo that our wants were not only re-

lieved, but we had more provifions than we could conſume.

Having got all our water on board, the ſhips being caulked, the rigging overhauled, and every thing put in order, I began to think of leaving the iſland, that I might have ſufficient time to ſpare for viſiting the others in this neighbourhood. With this view, we removed from the ſhore our obſervatories and inſtruments, and bent the ſails.

Early in the morning of the 22d, Otoo and his father came on board to know when I propoſed ſailing. For, having been informed that there was a good harbour at Eimeo, I had told them that I ſhould viſit that iſland on my way to Huaheine; and they were deſirous of taking a paſſage with me, and of their fleet ſailing at the ſame time to reinforce Towha. As I was ready to take my departure, I left it to them to name the day; and the Wedneſday following was fixed upon, when I was to take on board Otoo, his father, mother, and, in ſhort, the whole family. Theſe points being ſettled, I propoſed ſetting out immediately for Oparre, where all the fleet, fitted out for the expedition, was to aſſemble this day, and to be reviewed.

I had but juſt time to get into my boat, when news was brought that Towha had concluded a treaty with Maheine, and had returned with his fleet to Attahooroo. This unexpected event made all farther proceedings in the military way quite unneceſſary; and the war canoes, inſtead of rendezvouſing at Oparre, were ordered home to their reſpective diſtricts.

I now

I now returned on board my ſhip, attended by Otoo's mother, his three ſiſters, and eight more women. At firſt, I thought that this numerous train of females came into my boat with no other view than to get a paſſage to Matavai. But, when we arrived at the ſhip, they told me they intended paſſing the night on board, for the expreſs purpoſe of undertaking the cure of the diſorder I had complained of; which was a pain of the rheumatic kind. I accepted the friendly offer, had a bed ſpread for them upon the cabin floor, and ſubmitted myſelf to their directions. They began to ſqueeze me with both hands from head to foot, but more particularly on the parts where the pain was lodged, till they made my bones crack, and my fleſh became a perfect mummy. In ſhort, after undergoing this diſcipline about a quarter of an hour, I was glad to get away from them. However, the operation gave me immediate relief, which encouraged me to ſubmit to another rubbing-down before I went to bed; and it was ſo effectual, that I found myſelf pretty eaſy all the night after. My female phyſicians repeated their preſcription the next morning before they went aſhore, and again in the evening, when they returned on board; after which I found the pains entirely removed; and the cure being perfected, they took their leave of me the following morning. This they call romee; an operation, which, in my opinion, far exceeds the fleſh-bruſh, or any thing of the kind, that we make uſe of externally. It is univerſally practiſed amongſt theſe iſlanders; being ſometimes performed by the men, but more generally by the women.

The war with Eimeo being finally clofed, all our friends paid us a vifit on the 26th; and, as they knew that we were upon the point of failing, brought with them more hogs than we could take off their hands. For, having no falt left to preferve any, we wanted no more than for prefent ufe.

Our friend Omai got one good thing at this ifland, for the many good things he gave away. This was a very fine, double failing canoe, completely equipped, and fit for the fea. Some time before, I had made up for him a fuit of Englifh colours; but he thought thefe too valuable to be ufed at this time; and patched up a parcel of colours, fuch as flags and pendants, to the number of ten or a dozen, which he fpread on different parts of his veffel, all at the fame time; and drew together as many people to look at her, as a man of war would, dreffed, in a European port. Thefe ftreamers of Omai were a mixture of Engliſh, French, Spaniſh, and Dutch, which were all the European colours that he had feen.

Omai had alfo provided himfelf with a good ftock of cloth and cocoa-nut oil, which are not only in greater plenty, but much better at Otaheite than at any of the Society Iflands; infomuch, that they are articles of trade. Omai would not have behaved fo inconfiftently, and fo much unlike himfelf, as he did in many inftances, but for his fifter and brother-in-law, who, together with a few more of their acquaintance, engroffed him entirely to themfelves, with no other view than to ftrip him of every thing he had got. And they would undoubtedly have fucceeded in their fcheme, if I had not put a ftop

to

to it in time, by taking the moſt uſeful articles of his property into my poſſeſſion.

On the 28th, Otoo came on board, and informed me, that he had got a canoe, which he deſired I would take with me, and carry home, as a preſent from him to his Majeſty, the King of Great Britain, whom he called Earee rahie no Pretane; it being the only thing he ſaid that he could ſend worth his acceptance. I was not a little pleaſed with Otoo for this mark of his gratitude. It was a thought entirely his own, not one of us having given him the leaſt hint about it; and it ſhewed, that he fully underſtood to whom he was indebted for the moſt valuable preſents he had received. As it was too large for me to take on board, I could only thank him for his good intention; but it would have pleaſed him much better, if his preſent could have been accepted.

We were detained here ſome days longer than I expected, by light breezes from the weſt. At length, at three o'clock in the afternoon of the 29th, the wind came at eaſt, and we weighed anchor.

The frequent viſits we had lately paid to this iſland, ſeem to have created a full perſuaſion that the intercourſe will not be diſcontinued. It was ſtrictly enjoined to me by Otoo, to requeſt, in his name, the Earee rahie no Pretane, to ſend him, by the next ſhips, red feathers, and the birds that produce them; axes; half a dozen muſkets, with powder and ſhot; and by no means to forget horſes.

If I could have prevailed upon Omai to fix himſelf at Otaheite, I ſhould not have left it ſo ſoon as I did. For there was not a probability of our being better or cheaper ſupplied with refreſhments

freſhments at any other place than we continued to be here, even at the time of our leaving it. Beſides, ſuch a cordial friendſhip and confidence ſubſiſted between us and the inhabitants, as could hardly be expected any where elſe; and it was a little extraordinary, that this friendly intercourſe had never once been ſuſpended by any untoward accident, nor had there been a theft committed that deſerves to be mentioned.

When the Spaniſh ſhips, which had ſome time before touched here, left the iſland, four Spaniards remained behind. Two were prieſts, one a ſervant, and the fourth made himſelf very popular among the natives, who diſtinguiſh him by the name of Mateema. He ſeems to have been a perſon who had ſtudied their language; or, at leaſt to have ſpoken it ſo as to be underſtood; and to have taken uncommon pains to impreſs the minds of the iſlanders with the moſt exalted ideas of the greatneſs of the Spaniſh nation, and to make them think meanly of the Engliſh. He even went ſo far as to aſſure them, that we no longer exiſted as an independent nation: that Pretane was only a ſmall iſland, which they, the Spaniards had entirely deſtroyed; and, for me, that they had met with me at ſea, and, with a few ſhot, had ſent my ſhip, and every ſoul in her, to the bottom; ſo that my viſiting Otaheite, at this time, was of courſe very unexpected.

With what deſign the prieſts ſtayed we cannot gueſs. If it was to convert the natives to the catholic faith, they have not ſucceeded in any one inſtance. When they had ſtaid ten months, two ſhips came to Oheitepeha, took them on board, and ſailed again in five days. This haſty departure ſhews that whatever deſign the Spaniards

ards might have had upon this iſland, they had now laid it aſide; yet before they went away, they would have the natives believe that they ſtill meant to return, and to bring with them houſes, all kinds of animals, and men and women, who were to ſettle, live and die on the iſland. Otoo ſaid, if the Spaniards ſhould return, he would not let them come to Matavai Fort, which, he ſaid, was ours. It was eaſy to ſee that the idea pleaſed him; little thinking that the completion of it would, at once, deprive him of his kingdom, and the people of their liberties. This ſhews with what facility a ſettlement might be made at Otaheite; which, grateful as I am for repeated good offices, I hope will never happen.

We had no ſooner anchored at the neighbouring iſland of Eimeo, than the ſhips were crowded with the inhabitants, whom curioſity alone brought on board; for they had nothing with them for the purpoſes of barter. But, the next morning, this deficiency was ſupplied; ſeveral canoes then arriving from more diſtant parts, which brought with them abundance of bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and a few hogs. Theſe they exchanged for hatchets, nails, and beads; for red feathers were not ſo much ſought after here, as at Otaheite.

In the morning of the 2d of October, Maheine, the chief of the iſland, paid me a viſit. He approached the ſhip with great caution, and it required ſome perſuaſion to get him on board.

This chief, who, with a few followers, had made himſelf, in a manner, independent of Otaheite, is between forty and fifty years old. He is bald-headed; which is rather an uncommon appearance in theſe iſlands, at that age. He

wore

wore a kind of turban, and ſeemed aſhamed to ſhew his head. They had ſeen us ſhave the head of one of their people, whom we had caught ſtealing; they, therefore, concluded that this was the puniſhment uſually inflicted by us upon all thieves; and one or two of our gentlemen, whoſe heads were not overburthened with hair, we could obſerve, lay under violent ſuſpicions of being tetos, or thieves.

Having employed two or three days in getting up all our ſpirit caſks, to tar their heads, which we found neceſſary, to ſave them from the efforts of a ſmall inſect to deſtroy them, we hauled the ſhip off into the ſtream, on the 6th of October in the morning, intending to put to ſea the next day; but an accident happened that prevented it. We had ſent our goats aſhore, to graze, with two men to look after them; notwithſtanding which precaution, the natives had contrived to ſteal one of them this evening. The loſs of this goat would have been of little conſequence, if it had not interfered with my views of ſtocking other iſlands with theſe animals; but this being the caſe, it became neceſſary to recover it, if poſſible; and after much trouble we ſucceeded.

At Eimeo we abundantly ſupplied the ſhips with firewood. We had not taken in any at Otaheite, where the procuring this article would have been very inconvenient; there not being a tree at Matavai but what is uſeful to the inhabitants. We alſo got here good ſtore of refreſhments.

There is a very ſtriking difference in the women of this iſland and thoſe of Otaheite. Thoſe of Eimeo are of low ſtature, have a dark hue, and, in general, forbidding features. If we met

with

with a fine woman amongſt them, we were ſure, upon enquiry, to find that ſhe had come from ſome other iſland.

We left Eimeo on the 12th of October, and the next morning we ſaw Huaheine. At noon we anchored at the north entrance of Owharre harbour, which is on the weſt ſide of the iſland.

Our arrival brought all the principal people of the iſland to our ſhips, on the next morning, being the 13th. This was juſt what I wiſhed, as it was high time to think of ſettling Omai; and the preſence of theſe chiefs, I gueſſed would enable me to do it in the moſt ſatisfactory manner. He now ſeemed to have an inclination to eſtabliſh himſelf at Ulietea; and if he and I could have agreed about the mode of bringing that plan to bear, I ſhould have had no objection to adopt it. His father had been diſpoſſeſſed by the men of Bolabola, when they conquered Ulietea, of ſome land in that iſland; and I made no doubt of being able to get it reſtored to the ſon in an amicable manner. For that purpoſe it was neceſſary that he ſhould be on good terms with thoſe who now were maſters of the iſland; but he was too great a patriot to liſten to any ſuch thing; and was vain enough to ſuppoſe that I would reinſtate him in his forfeited lands by force. This made it impoſſible to fix him at Ulietea, and pointed out to me Huaheine as the proper place. I, therefore, reſolved to avail myſelf of the preſence of the chief men of the iſland, and to make this propoſal to them.

After the hurry of the morning was over, we got ready to pay a formal viſit to Taireetareea, the ſovereign, meaning then to introduce this buſineſs. Omai dreſſed himſelf very properly on the occaſion;

occaſion; and prepared a handſome preſent for the chief himſelf, and another for his Eatooa. Indeed, after he had got clear of the gang that ſurrounded him at Otaheite, he behaved with ſuch prudence as to gain reſpect. We waited ſome time for Taireetareea, as I would do nothing till the Earee rahie came; but when he appeared, I found that his preſence might have been diſpenſed with, as he was not above eight or ten years of age. Omai, who ſtood at a little diſtance from this circle of great men, began with making his offering to the gods, conſiſting of red feathers, cloth, &c. Each article was laid before one of the company, who, I underſtood was a prieſt, and was delivered with a ſet ſpeech or prayer, ſpoken by one of Omai's friends, who ſat by him, but moſtly dictated by himſelf. In theſe prayers, he did not forget his friends in England, nor thoſe who had brought him ſafe back. The Earee rahie no Pretane, Lord Sandwich, Toote, Tatee *, were mentioned in every one of them. When Omai's offerings and prayers were finiſhed, the prieſt took each article, in the ſame order in which it had been laid before him, and after repeating a prayer, ſent it to the morai; which, as Omai told us, was at a great diſtance, otherwiſe the offerings would have been made there.

Theſe religious ceremonies having been performed, Omai ſat down by me, and we entered upon buſineſs. Omai's eſtabliſhment was then propoſed to the aſſembled chiefs.

He acquainted them, "That he had been carried by us into our country, where he was well

* Cook and Clerke.

received

received by the great king and his Earees, and treated with every mark of regard and affection, while he ſtaid amongſt us; that he had been brought back again, enriched, by our liberality, with a variety of articles, which would prove very uſeful to his countrymen; and that, beſides the two horſes which were to remain with him, ſeveral new and valuable animals had been left at Otaheite, which would ſoon multiply, and furniſh a ſufficient number for the uſe of all the iſlands in the neighbourhood. He then ſignified to them, that it was my earneſt requeſt, in return for all my friendly offices, that they would give him a piece of land, to build a houſe upon, and to raiſe proviſions for himſelf and ſervants; adding, that if this could not be obtained for him in Huaheine, either by gift or by purchaſe, I was determined to carry him to Ulietea, and fix him there."

One of the chiefs immediately expreſſed himſelf to this effect: "That the whole Iſland of Huaheine, and every thing in it were mine; and that, therefore, I might give what portion of it I pleaſed to my friend." Omai was greatly pleaſed to hear this; thinking, no doubt, that I ſhould be very liberal, and give him enough. But to offer what it would have been improper to accept, I conſidered as offering nothing at all; and, therefore, I now deſired that they would not only aſſign the particular ſpot, but alſo the exact quantity of land, which they would allot for the ſettlement. And, after a ſhort conſultation among themſelves, my requeſt was granted by general conſent; and the ground immediately pitched upon, adjoining to the houſe where our meeting was held. The extent along the ſhore of the harbour, was about two hundred yards;

and its depth, to the foot of the hill ſomewhat more; but a proportional part of the hill was included in the grant.

This buſineſs being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all parties, I ſet up a tent aſhore, eſtabliſhed a poſt, and erected the obſervatories. The carpenters of both ſhips were alſo ſet to work to build a ſmall houſe for Omai, in which he might ſecure the European commodities that were his property. At the ſame time, ſome hands were employed in making a garden for his uſe.

Omai now began ſeriouſly to attend to his own affairs, and repented heartily of his ill-judged prodigality while at Otaheite. He found at Huaheine, a brother, a ſiſter, and a brother-in-law; the ſiſter being married. But theſe did not plunder him, as he had lately been by his other relations. I was ſorry, however, to diſcover, that though they were too honeſt to do him any injury, they were of too little conſequence in the iſland to do him any poſitive good. They had neither authority nor influence to protect his perſon, or his property; and, in that helpleſs ſituation, I had reaſon to apprehend that he run great riſk of being ſtripped of every thing he had got from us, as ſoon as he ſhould ceaſe to have us within his reach.

A man who is richer than his neighbours, is ſure to be envied by numbers who wiſh to ſee him brought down to their own level. But in countries, where civilivation, law, and religion, impoſe their reſtraints, the rich have a reaſonable ground of ſecurity. It was very different with Omai. He was to live amongſt thoſe who are ſtrangers, in a great meaſure, to any other principle of action beſides the immediate impulſe of their natural feelings. But, what was his prin-

cipal

cipal danger, he was to be placed in the very ſingular ſituation of being the only rich man in the community to which he was to belong. And having, by a fortunate connection with us, got into his poſſeſſion an accumulated quantity of a ſpecies of treaſures which none of his countrymen could create by any art or induſtry of their own, while all coveted a ſhare of this envied wealth, it was natural to apprehend that all would be ready to join in attempting to ſtrip its ſole proprietor.

To prevent this, if poſſible, I adviſed him to make a proper diſtribution of ſome of his moveables, to two or three of the principal chiefs; who, being thus gratified themſelves, might be induced to take him under their patronage, and protect him from the injuries of others. He promiſed to follow my advice; and I heard, with ſatisfaction, before I ſailed, that this very prudent ſtep had been taken. Not truſting, however, entirely to the operations of gratitude, I had recourſe to the more forcible motive of intimidation. With this view, I took every opportunity of notifying to the inhabitants, that it was my intention to return to their iſland again, after being abſent the uſual time; and that if I did not find Omai in the ſame ſtate of ſecurity in which I was now to leave him, all thoſe whom I ſhould then diſcover to have been his enemies, might expect to feel the weight of my reſentment.

While we lay in this harbour, we carried aſhore the bread, remaining in the bread-room, to clear it of vermin. The number of cockroaches that infeſted the ſhip at this time is incredible; the damage they did us was very conſiderable; and every method deviſed by us to deſtroy them proved ineffectual. According to Mr.

Anderſon's obſervations, they were of two ſorts, the blatta orientalis and germanica. The firſt of theſe had been carred home in the ſhip from her former voyage, where they withſtood the ſeverity of the hard winter in 1776, though ſhe was in dock all the time. The others had only made their appearance ſince our leaving New Zealand; but had increaſed ſo faſt, that when a ſail was looſened, thouſands of them fell upon the decks. The orientalis, though in infinite numbers, ſcarcely came out but in the night, when they made every thing in the cabin ſeem as if in motion, from the particular noiſe in crawling about.

The intercourſe of trade, and friendly offices, was carried on between us and the natives, without being diſturbed by any one accident, till the evening of the 22d, when a man found means to get into Mr. Bayly's obſervatory, and to carry off a ſextant unobſerved. As ſoon as I was made acquainted with the theft, I went aſhore, and got Omai to apply to the chiefs to procure reſtitution. He did ſo; but they took no ſteps towards it, being more attentive to a heeva, that was then acting, till I ordered the performers of the exhibition to deſiſt. They were now convinced that I was in earneſt, and began to make ſome enquiry after the thief, who was ſitting in the midſt of them, quite unconcerned, inſomuch that I was in great doubt of his being the guilty perſon; eſpecially as he denied it. Omai, however, aſſuring me that he was the man, I ſent him on board the ſhip, and there confined him. This raiſed a general ferment amongſt the aſſembled natives; and the whole body fled, in ſpite of all my endeavours to ſtop them. Having employed Omai to examine the priſoner, with ſome diffi-

culty

culty he was brought to confeſs where he had hid the ſextant; but, as it was now dark, we could not find it till day-light the next morning, when it was brought back unhurt. After this the natives recovered from their fright, and began to gather about us as uſual. As the thief ſeemed to be a very hardened fellow, I puniſhed him with ſome ſeverity.

This, however, did not deter him; for, in the night, between the 24th and 25th, a general alarm was ſpread, occaſioned, as was ſaid, by one of our goats being ſtolen by this very man. On examination, we found that all was ſafe in that quarter. Probably, the goats were ſo well guarded, that he could not put his deſign in execution. But his hoſtilities had ſucceeded againſt another object; and it appeared that he had deſtroyed and carried off ſeveral vines and cabbage plants, in Omai's grounds; and he publicly threatened to kill him, and to burn his houſe, as ſoon as we ſhould leave the iſland. To prevent the fellow's doing me and Omai any more miſchief, I had him ſeized, and confined again on board the ſhip, with a view of carrying him off the iſland; and it ſeemed to give general ſatisfaction to the chiefs, that I meant thus to diſpoſe of him.

Omai's houſe being nearly finiſhed, many of his moveables were carried aſhore on the 26th. Amongſt a variety of other uſeleſs articles, was a box of toys, which, when expoſed to public view, ſeemed greatly to pleaſe the gazing multitude. But as to his pots, kettles, diſhes, plates, drinking-mugs, glaſſes, and the whole train of our domeſtic accommodations, hardly any one of his countrymen would ſo much as look at them.

Omai himſelf now began to think that they were of no manner of uſe to him; that a baked hog was more ſavory food than a boiled one; that a plantain leaf made as good a diſh or plate as pewter; and that a cocoa-nut ſhell was as convenient a goblet as a black jack. And, therefore, he very wiſely diſpoſed of as many of theſe articles of Engliſh furniture, for the kitchen and pantry, as he could find purchaſers for, amongſt the people of the ſhips; receiving from them, in return, hatchets, and other iron tools, which had a more intrinſic value in this part of the world, and added more to his diſtinguiſhing ſuperiority over thoſe with whom he was to paſs the remainder of his days.

Early in the morning of the 30th, the Bolabola man, whom I had in confinement, found means to make his eſcape out of the ſhip. Upon enquiry, it appeared, that not only the ſentry placed over the priſoner, but the whole watch, upon the quarter deck, where he was confined, had laid themſelves down to ſleep. He ſeized the opportunity to take the key of the irons out of the binnacle drawer, where he had ſeen it put, and ſet himſelf at liberty. I was not a little pleaſed to hear, afterward, that this fellow had tranſported himſelf to Ulietea.

As ſoon as Omai was ſettled in his new habitation, I began to think of leaving the iſland; and got every thing off from the ſhore this evening, except the horſe and mare, and a goat big with kid; which were left in the poſſeſſion of our friend, with whom we were now finally to part. I alſo gave him a boar and two ſows of the Engliſh breed; and he had got a ſow or two of his own.

The

The hiſtory of Omai will, perhaps, intereſt a very numerous claſs of readers, more than any other occurrence of the voyage. Every circumſtance, therefore, which may ſerve to convey a ſatisfactory account of the exact ſituation in which he was left, will be thought worth preſerving; and the following particulars are added, to complete the view of his domeſtic eſtabliſhment. He had picked up, at Otaheite, four or five Toutous; the two New Zealand youths remained with him; and his brother, and ſome others, joined him at Huaheine; ſo that his family conſiſted already of eight or ten perſons; if that can be called a family, to which not a ſingle female, as yet, belonged. At preſent Omai did not ſeem at all diſpoſed to take unto himſelf a wife.

The houſe that we erected for him was twenty-four feet by eighteen; and ten feet high. It was ſettled that, immediately after our departure, he ſhould begin to build a large houſe, after the faſhion of his country; one end of which was to be brought over that which we had erected, ſo as to incloſe it entirely, for greater ſecurity. In this work, ſome of the chiefs promiſed to aſſiſt him; and, if the intended building ſhould cover the ground which he marked out, it will be as large as moſt upon the iſland.

His European weapons conſiſted of a muſket, bayonet, and cartouch box; a fowling-piece; two pair of piſtols; and two or three ſwords or cutlaſſes. The poſſeſſion of theſe made him quite happy; which was my only view in giving him ſuch preſents. For I was always of opinion, that he would have been happier without firearms, and other European weapons, than with them;

as

as ſuch implements of war, in the hands of one, whoſe prudent uſe of them I had ſome grounds for miſtruſting, would rather increaſe his dangers than eſtabliſh his ſuperiority. After he had got on ſhore every thing that belonged to him, and was ſettled in his houſe, he had moſt of the officers of both ſhips, two or three times, to dinner; and his table was always well ſupplied with the very beſt proviſions that the iſland produced.

Before I ſailed, I had the following inſcription cut upon the outſide of his houſe:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.
Naves { Reſolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.
Diſcovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 2d of November, at four in the afternoon, I took the advantage of a breeze, which then ſprung up at eaſt, and ſailed out of the harbour. Moſt of our friends remained on board till the ſhips were under ſail; when, to gratify their curioſity, I ordered five guns to be fired. They then all took their leave, except Omai, who remained till we were at ſea. In an hour or two after he went aſhore, taking a very affectionate farewell of all the officers. He ſuſtained himſelf with a manly reſolution, till he came to me. Then his utmoſt efforts to conceal his tears failed; and Mr. King, who went in the boat, told me that he wept all the time in going aſhore.

It was no ſmall ſatisfaction to reflect, that we had brought him ſafe back to the very ſpot from which he was taken. And, yet, ſuch is the ſtrange nature of human affairs, that it is probable we left him in a leſs deſirable ſituation, than he was in before his connection with us.

Omai,

Omai, from being much careſſed in England, loſt ſight of his original condition; and never conſidered in what manner his acquiſitions, either of knowledge or of riches, would be eſtimated by his countrymen, at his return; which were the only things he could have to recommend him to them now, more than before, and on which he could build his future greatneſs or happineſs. Rank ſeems to be the very foundation of all diſtinction here, and, of its attendant, power; and, ſo pertinaciouſly, or rather blindly, adhered to, that, unleſs a perſon has ſome degree of it, he will certainly be deſpiſed and hated, if he aſſumes the appearance of exerciſing any authority. This was really the caſe, in ſome meaſure, with Omai; though his countrymen were pretty cautious of expreſſing their ſentiments while we remained amongſt them. Had he made a proper uſe of the preſents he brought with him from England, this, with the knowledge he had acquired by travelling ſo far, might have enabled him to form the moſt uſeful connections. But we have already given inſtances of his childiſh inattention to this obvious means of advancing his intereſt. His ſchemes ſeemed to be of a higher, though ridiculous, nature; indeed, I might ſay, meaner; for revenge, rather than a deſire of becoming great, appeared to actuate him from the beginning. This, however, may be excuſed, if we conſider that it is common to his countrymen. His father was, doubtleſs, a man of conſiderable property in Ulietea, when that iſland was conquered by thoſe of Bolabola; and, with many others, ſought refuge in Huaheine, where he died, and left Omai, with ſome other children; who, by that means, became totally dependant.

dependant. In this ſituation, he was taken up by Captain Furneaux, and carried to England. Whether he really expected, from his treatment there, that any aſſiſtance would be given him againſt the enemies of his father and his country, or whether he imagined that his own perſonal courage, and ſuperiority of knowledge, would be ſufficient to diſpoſſeſs the conquerors of Ulietea, is uncertain; but from the beginning of the voyage, this was his conſtant theme. He would not liſten to our remonſtrances on ſo wild a determination; but flew into a paſſion, if more moderate and reaſonable counſels were propoſed for his advantage. As we advanced, however, on our voyage, he became more ſenſible of his error; and, by the time we reached the Friendly Iſlands, had even ſuch apprehenſions of his reception at home, that he would fain have ſtaid behind at Tongataboo, under Feenou's protection. At theſe iſlands he ſquandered away much of his European treaſure, very unneceſſarily. At Matavai, he continued the ſame inconſiderate behaviour, till I abſolutely put a ſtop to his profuſion.

Whether the remains of his European wealth, which, after all his improvident waſte, was ſtill conſiderable, will be more prudently adminiſtered by him, or whether the ſteps I took, as already explained, to inſure him protection in Huaheine, ſhall have proved effectual, muſt be left to the deciſion of future navigators of this ocean; with whom it cannot but be a principal object of curioſity to trace the future fortunes of our traveller.

Whatever faults belonged to Omai's character, they were more than overbalanced by his great good-nature and docile diſpoſition. During the

whole

whole time he was with me, I very ſeldom had reaſon to be ſeriouſly diſpleaſed with his general conduct. His grateful heart always retained the higheſt ſenſe of the favours he had received in England; nor will he ever forget thoſe who honoured him with their protection and friendſhip, during his ſtay there. He had a tolerable ſhare of underſtanding, but wanted application and perſeverance to exert it; ſo that his knowledge of things was very general, and, in many inſtances, imperfect. He was not a man of much obſervation. There were many uſeful arts, as well as elegant amuſements, amongſt the people of the Friendly Iſlands, which he might have conveyed to his own; where they probably would have been readily adopted, as being ſo much in their own way. But I never found that he uſed the leaſt endeavour to make himſelf maſter of any one. This kind of indifference is, indeed, the characteriſtic foible of his nation. We are not, therefore, to expect that Omai will be able to introduce many of our arts and cuſtoms amongſt them, or much improve thoſe to which they have been long habituated. I am confident, however, that he will endeavour to bring to perfection, the various fruits and vegetables we planted, which will be no ſmall acquiſition. But the greateſt benefit theſe iſlands are likely to receive from Omai's travels, will be in the animals that have been left upon them; which, probably, they never would have got, had he not come to England. When theſe multiply, of which I think there is little doubt, Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands, will equal, if not exceed, any place in the known world, for proviſions.

Omai's return, and the ſubſtantial proofs he brought back with him of our liberality, encouraged many to offer themſelves as volunteers to attend me to Pretane. I took every opportunity of expreſſing my determination to reject all ſuch applications.

If there had been the moſt diſtant probability of any ſhip being again ſent to New Zealand, I would have brought the two youths of that country home with me; as both of them were very deſirous of continuing with us. Tiarooa, the eldeſt, was an exceedingly well-diſpoſed young man, with ſtrong natural ſenſe, and capable of receiving any inſtruction. He ſeemed to be fully ſenſible of the inferiority of his own country to theſe iſlands, and reſigned himſelf, though perhaps with reluctance, to end his days in eaſe and plenty, in Huaheine. But the other was ſo ſtrongly attached to us, that he was taken out of the ſhip, and carried aſhore by force. He was a witty, ſmart boy; and on that account much noticed on board.

The boat which carried Omai aſhore, (never to join us again,) having returned to the ſhip, we hoiſted her in, and immediately ſtood over for Ulietea, where I intended to touch next.

On the 4th we arrived in the harbour of Ohamaneno, and were viſited by Oreo, the chief of the iſland, with whom I interchanged civilities and preſents.

On the 6th, we ſet up the obſervatories, and got the neceſſary inſtruments on ſhore.

Though we had ſeparated from Omai, we were ſtill near enough to have intelligence of his proceedings; and I had deſired to hear from him. Accordingly, about a fortnight after our arrival

at Ulietea, he ſent two of his people in a canoe; who brought me the ſatisfactory intelligence, that he remained undiſturbed by the people of the iſland, and that every thing went well with him, except that his goat had died in kidding. He accompanied this intelligence with a requeſt, that I would ſend him another goat, and two axes. Being happy to have this additional opportunity of ſerving him, the meſſengers were ſent back to Huaheine, on the 18th, with the axes, and two kids, male and female, which were ſpared for him out of the Diſcovery.

On the 24th, I was informed that a midſhipman and a ſeaman, both belonging to the Diſcovery, were miſſing. As the midſhipman was known to have expreſſed a deſire to remain at theſe iſlands, it ſeemed pretty certain that he and his companion had gone off with this intention; and Captain Clerke ſet out in queſt of them, with two armed boats, and a party of marines. His expedition proved fruitleſs, for he returned in the evening without having got any certain intelligence where they were. From the conduct of the natives, Captain Clerke ſeemed to think that they intended to conceal the deſerters; and, with that view, had amuſed him with falſe information the whole day, and directed him to ſearch for them in places where they were not to be found. The captain judged right; for, the next morning, we were told that our runaways were at Otaha. As theſe two were not the only perſons in the ſhips who wiſhed to end their days at theſe favourite iſlands, in order to put a ſtop to any further deſertion, it was neceſſary to get them back at all events; and that the natives

might be convinced that I was in earneſt, I reſolved to go after them myſelf.

Accordingly, I ſet out the next morning, with two armed boats, being accompanied by the chief himſelf. I proceeded, as he directed, without ſtopping any where, till we came to the middle of the eaſt ſide of Otaha. But when we got to the place where we expected to find them, we were told, that they had quitted this iſland, and gone over to Bolabola the day before. I did not think proper to follow them thither; but returned to the ſhips; fully determined, however, to have recourſe to a meaſure, which, I gueſſed would oblige the natives to bring them back.

Soon after day-break, the chief, his ſon, daughter, and ſon-in-law, came on board the Reſolution. The three laſt I reſolved to detain, till the two deſerters ſhould be brought back. With this view, Captain Clerke invited them to go on board his ſhip; and as ſoon as they arrived there, confined them in his cabin. The chief was with me when the news reached him. He immediately acquainted me with it, ſuppoſing that this ſtep had been taken without my knowledge, and conſequently without my approbation. I inſtantly undeceived him; and then he began to have apprehenſions as to his own ſituation, and his looks expreſſed the utmoſt perturbation of mind. But I ſoon made him eaſy as to this, by telling him that he was at liberty to leave the ſhip whenever he pleaſed, and to take ſuch meaſures as he ſhould judge beſt calculated to get our two men back; that if he ſucceeded, his friends on board the Diſcovery ſhould be delivered up; if not, that I was determined to carry them away with me.

Oreo himſelf did not give way to unavailing lamentations, but inſtantly began his exertions to recover our deſerters, by diſpatching a canoe to Bolabola, with a meſſage to Opoony, the ſovereign of that iſland, acquainting him with what had happened, and requeſting him to ſeize the two fugitives, and ſend them back. The meſſenger, who was no leſs a man than the father of Pootoe, Oreo's ſon-in-law, before he ſet out, came to receive my commands.

The conſequence, however, of the priſoners was ſo great, that the natives did not think proper to truſt to the return of our people for their releaſe; or, at leaſt, their impatience was ſo great, that it hurried them to meditate an attempt which might have involved them in ſtill greater diſtreſs, had it not been fortunately prevented. Between five and ſix o'clock in the evening, I obſerved that all their canoes, in and about the harbour, began to move off, as if ſome ſudden panic had ſeized them. I was aſhore, abreaſt of the ſhip, at the time, and enquired, in vain, to find out the cauſe; till our people called to us from the Diſcovery, and told us that a party of the natives had ſeized Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, who had walked out a little way from the ſhips. Struck with the boldneſs of this plan of retaliation, which ſeemed to counteract me ſo effectually in my own way, there was no time to deliberate. I inſtantly ordered the people to arm; and, in leſs than five minutes, a ſtrong party, under the command of Mr. King, was ſent to reſcue our two gentlemen. At the ſame time, two armed boats, aud a party under Mr. Williamſon, went after the flying canoes, to cut off their retreat to the ſhore. Theſe ſeveral detachments

were hardly out of ſight, before an account arrived that we had been miſinformed; upon which I ſent and called them all in.

It was evident, however, from ſeveral corroborating circumſtances, that the deſign of ſeizing Captain Clerke had really been in agitation amongſt the natives. Nay, they made no ſecret in ſpeaking of it the next day. But their firſt and great plan of operations, was to have laid hold of me. It was my cuſtom, every evening, to bathe in the freſh water. Very often I went alone; and always without arms. Expecting me to go, as uſual, this evening, they had determined to ſeize me, and Captain Clerke too, if he had accompanied me. But I had, after confining Oreo's family, thought it prudent to avoid putting myſelf in their power; and had cautioned Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to go far from the ſhips. In the courſe of the afternoon, the chief aſked me three ſeveral times, if I would not go to the bathing place; and when he found, at laſt, that I could not be prevailed upon, he went off, with the reſt of his people, in ſpite of all that I could do or ſay to ſtop him. But as I had no ſuſpicion, at this time, of their deſign, I imagined that ſome ſudden fright had ſeized them, which would, as uſual, ſoon be over. Finding themſelves diſappointed as to me, they fixed on thoſe who were more in their power. It was fortunate, for all parties, that they did not ſucceed; and not leſs fortunate, that no miſchief was done on the occaſion. For not a muſket was fired, except two or three, to ſtop the canoes. To that firing, perhaps, Meſſrs. Clerke and Gore owed their ſafety; for, at that very inſtant, a party of the natives, armed with clubs.

were

were advancing toward them; and, on hearing the report of the muſkets, they diſperſed.

Oreo, the chief, being uneaſy, as well as myſelf, that no account had been received from Bolabola, ſet out the evening of the 28th, for that iſland, and deſired me to follow down the next day with the ſhips. This was my intention; but the wind would not admit of our getting to ſea. But the ſame wind, which kept us in the harbour, brought Oreo back from Bolabola with the two deſerters. They had reached Otaha the ſame night they deſerted; but, finding it impoſſible to get to any of the iſlands to the eaſtward, for want of wind, they had proceeded to Bolabola, and from thence to the ſmall iſland Toobaee, where they were taken. As ſoon as they were on board, the three priſoners were releaſed. Thus ended an affair which had given me much trouble and vexation. Nor would I have exerted myſelf ſo reſolutely on the occaſion, but for the reaſon before-mentioned, and to ſave the ſon of a brother officer from being loſt to his country.

The wind continuing contrary, confined us in the harbour till the morning of the 7th of December; when we took the advantage of a light breeze at north-eaſt, and, with the aſſiſtance of all the boats, got out to ſea.

As ſoon as we had got clear of the harbour, we took our leave of Ulietea, and ſteered for Bolabola. Oreo, and ſix or eight men more, took a paſſage with us. My ſole object in viſiting this iſland was, to get poſſeſſion of an anchor, which M. Bougainville had loſt at Otaheite; it was taken up there, and ſent to the chief of this place as a preſent. I wanted it to fabricate hatchets

and other iron tools, which we had almoſt expended in exchange for refreſhments, and we now wanted to create a new ſtock of trading articles.

We landed where the natives directed us; and, ſoon after, I was introduced to Opoony, the chief, in the midſt of a great concourſe of people, having no time to loſe, as ſoon as the neceſſary formality of compliments was over, I aſked the chief to give me the anchor, and produced the preſent I had prepared for him, conſiſting of a linen night-gown, a ſhirt, ſome gauze handkerchiefs, a looking-glaſs, ſome beads, and other toys; and ſix axes. Upon the receipt of theſe preſents, he ordered it to be delivered. Having thus completed my negotiation, I returned on board, hoiſted in the boats, and made ſail from the iſland to the north.

When we conſider that this iſland is not more than eight leagues in compaſs, it is rather remarkable that its people ſhould have attempted, or have been able to achieve the conqueſt of Ulietea and Otaha, the former of which iſlands is, of itſelf, at leaſt double its ſize.

How high the Bolabola men are now in eſtimation at Otaheite, may be inferred from Monſieur de Bougainville's anchor having been conveyed to them. To the ſame cauſe we muſt aſcribe the intention of tranſporting to their iſland the Spaniſh buſh. And they had already got poſſeſſion of a ram, brought to Otaheite by the Spaniards. I carried aſhore an ewe, which we had brought from the Cape of Good Hope; and I hope that, by this preſent, I have laid the foundation for a breed of ſheep at Bolabola. I alſo left at Ulietea, under the care of Oreo, an Engliſh boar and

ſow,

ſow, and two goats. So that not only Otaheite, but all the neighbouring iſlands, will, in a few years, have their race of hogs conſiderably improved; and, probably, be ſtocked with all the valuable animals which have been tranſported hither by their European viſiters.

Captain Cook informs his readers that the following obſervations on theſe iſlands are written by Mr. Anderſon.—Perhaps there is ſcarcely a ſpot in the univerſe that affords a more luxuriant proſpect, than the ſouth-eaſt part of Otaheite. The hills are high and ſteep; but they are covered to the very ſummits with trees and ſhrubs. The flat land, which bounds thoſe hills toward the ſea, and the interjacent valleys alſo, teem with various productions, that grow with the moſt exuberant vigour. Nature has been no leſs liberal in diſtributing rivulets, which are found in every valley. The habitations of the natives are ſcattered, without order, upon theſe flats; and many of them appearing toward the ſhore, preſented a delightful ſcene, viewed from our ſhips.

The natural fertility of the country, combined with the mildneſs and ſerenity of the climate, renders the natives careleſs in their cultivation. The cloth-plant, which is raiſed by ſeeds brought from the mountains, and the ava, or intoxicating pepper, are almoſt the only things to which they ſeem to pay any attention.

I have enquired very carefully into their manner of cultivating the bread-fruit tree; but was always anſwered that they never planted it. This, indeed, muſt be evident to every one who will examine the places where the young trees come up.

Their

Their chief trees beſide, are the cocoa-nut and the plantain; the latter only requires attention: in three months, after it is planted, it begins to bear; during which time it gives young ſhoots, which ſupply a ſucceſſion of fruit. For the old ſtocks are cut down as the fruit is taken off.

Curioſities of any kind are not numerous. Amongſt theſe we may reckon a pond or lake of freſh water, at the top of one of the higheſt mountains; to go to, and to return from which, takes three or four days. It is remarkable for its depth, and has eels of an enormous ſize in it. This is eſteemed one of the greateſt natural curioſities in the country.

The muſcular appearance, ſo common amongſt the Friendly iſlanders, and which ſeems a conſequence of their being accuſtomed to much action, is loſt here, where the ſuperior fertility of their country enables the inhabitants to lead a more indolent life.

Perſonal endowments being in great eſteem amongſt them, they have recourſe to ſeveral methods of improving them, according to their notions of beauty. This is done by remaining a month or two in the houſe; during which time they wear a great quantity of clothes, and eat nothing but bread-fruit, to which they aſcribe a remarkable property in whitening them.

Their common diet is made up of, at leaſt, nine-tenths of vegetable food; and it is, perhaps, owing to this temperate courſe of life that they have ſo few diſeaſes among them. They only reckon five or ſix, which might be called chronic, or national diſorders.

Their behaviour, on all occaſions, ſeems to indicate a great openneſs and generoſity of diſpoſition.

tion. I never ſaw them, in any misfortune, labour under the appearance of anxiety, after the critical moment was paſt. Neither does care ever ſeem to wrinkle their brow, On the contrary, even the approach of death does not appear to alter their uſual vivacity.

Such a diſpoſition leads them to direct all their aims only to what can give them pleaſure and eaſe. They delight in muſic; neither are they ſtrangers to the ſoothing effects produced by particular ſorts of motion; which, in ſome caſes, ſeem to allay any perturbation of mind, with as much ſucceſs as muſic.

The Otaheiteans expreſs their notions of death very emphatically, by ſaying, that "the ſoul goes into darkneſs;" or rather into night. Their language is ſo copious, that for the bread-fruit alone, in its different ſtates, they have above twenty names; as many for the taro root; and about ten for the cocoa-nut.

Notwithſtanding the extreme fertility of the iſland, a famine frequently happens, in which, it is ſaid, many periſh. In times of ſcarcity, after their bread-fruit and yams are conſumed, they have recourſe to various roots, which grow, without cultivation, upon the mountains. The patarra, which is found in vaſt quantities, is what they uſe firſt. It is not unlike a very large potatoe or yam, and good when in its growing ſtate.

Of animal food, a very ſmall portion falls, at any time, to the ſhare of the lower claſs of people; and then it is either fiſh, ſea-eggs, or other marine productions; for they ſeldom or ever eat pork. The Eree de hoi * alone, is able to fur-

* Mr. Anderſon invariably in his manuſcript writes Eree de hoi. According to Captain Cook's mode, it is Eree rahie.

niſh

niſh pork every day; and inferior chiefs, according to their riches, once a week, fortnight, or month.

It is alſo amongſt the better ſort that the ava is chiefly uſed. But this beverage is prepared ſomewhat differently from that which we ſaw ſo much of at the Friendly Iſlands. They pour a very ſmall quantity of water upon the root here; and ſometimes roaſt or bake, and bruiſe, the ſtalks, without chewing it previouſly to its infuſion. But its pernicious effects are very obvious; perhaps, owing to the manner of preparing it; as we often ſaw inſtances of its intoxicating, or rather ſtupifying, powers. As an excuſe for a practice ſo deſtructive, they allege that it is adopted to prevent their growing too fat; but it evidently enervates them, and, in all probability, ſhortens their days.

The times of eating, at Otaheite, are very frequent. Their firſt meal is about two o'clock in the morning, after which they go to ſleep; and the next is at eight. At eleven, they dine; and again, at two, and at five; and ſup at eight. The women have not only the mortification of being obliged to eat by themſelves, and in a different part of the houſe from the men, but, by a ſtrange kind of policy, are excluded from a ſhare of moſt of the better ſorts of food. The women, generally, ſerve up their own victuals; for they would certainly ſtarve, before any grown man would do them ſuch an office. When we enquired into the reaſons of it, we could get no other anſwer, but that it is right and neceſſary that it ſhould be ſo.

The women, indeed, are often treated with a degree of harſhneſs, or rather brutality, which

one would ſcarcely ſuppoſe a man would beſtow on an object for whom he had the leaſt affection. Nothing, however, is more common than to ſee the men beat them without mercy; and, unleſs this treatment is the effect of jealouſy, which both ſexes, at leaſt, pretend to be ſometimes infected with, it will be difficult to account for it.

Their religious ſyſtem is extenſive, and, in many inſtances, ſingular; but few of the common people have a perfect knowledge of it; that being confined chiefly to their prieſts, who are pretty numerous. They do not ſeem to pay reſpect to one god, as poſſeſſing pre-eminence, but believe in a plurality of divinities, who are all very powerful.

Their aſſiduity in ſerving their gods is remarkably conſpicuous. Not only the whattas, or offering-places of the morais, are commonly loaded with fruits and animals; but there are few houſes where you do not meet with a ſmall place of the ſame ſort near them. Many of them are ſo rigidly ſcrupulous, that they will not begin a meal without firſt laying aſide a morſel for the Eatooa.

They believe the ſoul to be both immaterial and immortal. They ſay that it keeps fluttering about the lips during the pangs of death; and that then it aſcends, and mixes with; or, as they expreſs it, is eaten by the deity. In this ſtate it remains for ſome time; after which it departs to a certain place, deſtined for the reception of the ſouls of men, where it exiſts in eternal night. They have no idea of any permanent puniſhment after death; for the ſouls of good and of bad

men

men are eaten indiſcriminately by God. According to their doctrine, if a man refrain from all connection with women ſome months before death, he paſſes immediately into his eternal manſion.

Some of their notions about the deity are extravagantly abſurd. They believe that he is ſubject to the power of thoſe very ſpirits to whom he has given exiſtence; and that, in their turn, they frequently eat or devour him, though he poſſeſs the power of re-creating himſelf. When the moon is in its wane, it is ſaid, that they are then devouring their Eatooa; and that as it increaſes, he is renewing himſelf.

They have traditions concerning the creation, which, as might be expected, are complex, and clouded with obſcurity. They ſay that a goddeſs, having a lump or maſs of earth ſuſpended in a cord, gave it a ſwing, and ſcattered about pieces of land, thus conſtituting Otaheite, and the neighbouring iſlands, which were all peopled by a man and woman originally fixed at Otaheite. The ſpots obſerved in the moon, are ſuppoſed to be groves of a ſort of trees which once grew in Otaheite, and, being deſtroyed by ſome accident, their ſeeds were carried up thither by doves, where they now flouriſh.

The ranks of people, beſides the Eree de hoi, or king and his family, are the erees, or powerful chiefs; the manahoone, or vaſſals; and the teou, or toutou, ſervants, or rather ſlaves. The men of each of theſe, according to the regular inſtitution, form their connections with women of their reſpective ranks; but if with any inferior one, which frequently happens, and a child

be

be born, it is preſerved, and has the rank of the father, unleſs it happens to be an eree, when, ſhocking to relate, it is killed.

In conformity alſo to ancient practice eſtabliſhed amongſt them, many crimes are left to be puniſhed by the ſufferer; they ſeem to think that the injured perſon will judge as equitably as thoſe who are totally unconcerned. If any one be caught ſtealing, the proprietor of the goods may put the thief inſtantly to death; and if any one ſhould enquire of him after the deceaſed, it is ſufficient to acquit him, if he only inform them of the provocation he had to kill him. But ſo ſevere a puniſhment is ſeldom inflicted, unleſs the articles, that are ſtolen, be reckoned very valuable. For ſmall thefts, a ſlight beating only is inflicted. If a perſon kill another in a quarrel, the friends of the deceaſed aſſemble, and engage the ſurvivor and his adherents. If they conquer, they take poſſeſſion of the houſe, lands, and goods of the other party; but if conquered, the reverſe takes place. We need not wonder, that the killing of a man ſhould be conſidered as ſo trifling an offence amongſt a people who do not conſider infanticide as a crime. So far we have copied from Mr. Anderſon.

Monday, December the 8th, after leaving Bolabola, I ſteered to the northward, with the wind generally eaſtward, till after we had croſſed the line, and had got into north latitudes.

Seventeen months had now elapſed ſince our departure from England. With regard to the principal object of my inſtructions, our voyage was, at this time, only beginning; and, therefore, my attention to every circumſtance that might contribute toward our ſafety and ſucceſs,

was now to be called forth anew. As ſoon as I had got beyond the extent of my former diſcoveries, I ordered a ſurvey to be taken of all the ſtores that were in the ſhips, that I might know how to uſe them to the greateſt advantage.

On the 24th, after paſſing the line, land was diſcovered. Upon a nearer approach, it was found to be one of thoſe low iſlands ſo common in this ocean; that is, a narrow bank of land incloſing the ſea within. A few cocoa-nut trees were ſeen in two or three places; but, in general, the land had a very barren appearance.

At day-break, the next morning, I ſent two boats to ſearch more accurately for a landing-place; and, at the ſame time, two others, to fiſh at a grappling near the ſhore. Theſe laſt returned about eight o'clock, with upward of two hundred weight of fiſh. Encouraged by this ſucceſs, they were diſpatched again after breakfaſt.

On the 26th and the following day, we caught a conſiderable number of turtles.

On the 28th, I landed, in company with Mr. Bayly, on the iſland, which lies between the two channels, to prepare the teleſcopes for obſerving an approaching eclipſe of the ſun; which was one great inducement to my anchoring here.

On the morning of the 30th, the day when the eclipſe was to happen, Mr. King, Mr. Bayly, and myſelf, went aſhore, to attend the obſervation, in which we had tolerable ſucceſs.

In the afternoon, the boats and turtling party all returned on board, except a ſeaman belonging to the Diſcovery, who had been miſſing two days. There were two of them at firſt who had loſt their way; but diſagreeing about the moſt probable track to bring them back to their companions,

nions, they had ſeparated; and one of them joined the party, after having been abſent twenty-four hours, and been in great diſtreſs.

As ſoon as Captain Clerke knew that one of the ſtragglers was ſtill in this awkward ſituation, he ſent a party in ſearch of him, who returned with their loſt companion. This poor fellow muſt have ſuffered far greater diſtreſs than the other ſtraggler; not only as having been loſt a longer time, but as we found that he was too ſqueamiſh to drink turtle's blood, which the other did, as there was no water in the iſland.

Having ſome cocoa-nuts and yams on board, in a ſtate of vegetation, I ordered them to be planted here.

We got at this iſland, for both ſhips, about three hundred turtle, weighing, one with another, about ninety or a hundred pounds. They were all of the green kind, and, perhaps, as good as any in the world. We alſo caught, with hook and line, as much fiſh as we could conſume during our ſtay. They conſiſted principally of cavallies, of different ſizes; large and ſmall ſnappers; and a few of two ſorts of rock-fiſh.

There were not the ſmalleſt traces of any human being having ever been here before us; and, indeed, ſhould any one be ſo unfortunate as to be accidentally driven upon the iſland, or left there, it is hard to ſay, that he could be able to prolong exiſtence. A ſhip touching here, muſt expect nothing but fiſh and turtle; and of theſe an abundant ſupply may be depended upon.

As we kept our Chriſtmas here, I called this diſcovery Chriſtmas Iſland.

On the 2d of January 1778, at day-break, we

weighed anchor, and resumed our course to the north. We discovered no land till day-break in the morning of the 18th, when an island made its appearance; and soon after, we saw more land, entirely detached from the former.

On the 19th, at sun-rise, the island first seen bore east, several leagues distant. This being directly to windward, which prevented our getting near it, I stood for the other; and, not long after, discovered a third island in the direction of west-north-west, as far distant as land could be seen. Soon after we saw some canoes coming off from the shore toward the ships. I immediately brought to, to give them time to join us. They had from three to six men each; and, on their approach, we were agreeably surprised to find that they spoke the language of Otaheite, and of the other islands we had lately visited. It required but very little address to get them to come along-side; but no entreaties could prevail upon any of them to come on board. I tied some brass medals to a rope, and gave them to those in one of the canoes, who, in return, tied some small mackerel to the rope, as an equivalent. This was repeated; and some small nails, or bits of iron, which they valued more than any other article, were given them.

These people were of a brown colour; and, though of the common size, were stoutly made. There was little difference in the casts of their colour, but a considerable variation in their features; some of their visages not being very unlike those of Europeans. They seemed very mild; and had no arms of any kind, if we except some small stones, which they had evidently

brought

brought for their own defence; and theſe they threw overboard, when they found that they were not wanted.

Seeing no ſigns of an anchoring place at this caſtern extreme of the iſland, I ranged along the ſouth-eaſt ſide, at the diſtance of half a league from the ſhore. As ſoon as we made ſail, the canoes left us; but others came off, as we proceeded along the coaſt, bringing with them roaſting pigs, and ſome very fine potatoes, which they exchanged, as the others had done, for whatever was offered to them. Several ſmall pigs were purchaſed for a ſix-penny-nail; ſo that we again found ourſelves in a land of plenty.

The next morning we ſtood in for the land, and were met by ſeveral canoes filled with people, ſome of whom took courage and ventured on board.

In the courſe of my ſeveral voyages, I never before met with the natives of any place ſo much aſtoniſhed as theſe people were, upon entering a ſhip. Their eyes were continually flying from object to object; the wildneſs of their looks and geſtures fully expreſſing their entire ignorance about every thing they ſaw, and ſtrongly marking to us, that, till now, they had never been viſited by Europeans, nor been acquainted with any of our commodities, except iron; which, however, it was plain, they had only heard of, or had known it in ſome ſmall quantity, brought to them at ſome diſtant period. They ſeemed only to underſtand that it was a ſubſtance, much better adapted to the purpoſes of cutting, or of boring holes, than any thing their own country produced. They aſked for it by the name of hamaite, probably referring to ſome inſtrument,

in the making of which iron could be uſefully employed. For the ſame reaſon, they frequently called iron by the name of toe, which, in their language, ſignifies a hatchet, or rather a kind of adze. When we ſhewed them ſome beads, they aſked firſt, "What they were; and then, whether they ſhould eat them." But on their being told, that they were to be hung in their ears, they returned them as uſeleſs. They were equally indifferent as to a looking-glaſs which was offered them, and returned it for the ſame reaſon; but ſufficiently expreſſed their deſire for hamaite and toe, which they wiſhed might be very large. They were, in ſome reſpect, naturally well bred; or, at leaſt, fearful of giving offence, aſking, where they ſhould ſit down, whether they might ſpit upon the deck, and the like. Some of them repeated a long prayer before they came on board; and others, afterwards, ſung and made motions with their hands, ſuch as we had been accuſtomed to ſee in the dances of the iſlands we had lately viſited. There was another circumſtance, in which they alſo perfectly reſembled thoſe other iſlanders. At firſt, on their entering the ſhip, they endeavoured to ſteal every thing they came near; or rather to take it openly, as what we either ſhould not reſent, or not hinder. We ſoon convinced them of their miſtake; and if they, after ſome time, became leſs active in appropriating to themſelves whatever they took a fancy to, it was becauſe they found that we kept a watchful eye over them.

At nine o'clock, being pretty near the ſhore, I ſent three armed boats, under the command of Lieutenant Williamſon, to look for a landing-place, and for freſh water. I ordered him, that

if

if he ſhould find it neceſſary to land in ſearch of the latter, not to ſuffer more than one man to go with him out of the boats.

While the boats were occupied in examining the coaſt, we ſtood on and off with the ſhips, waiting for their return. About noon, Mr. Williamſon came back, and reported that he had ſeen a large pond near one of the villages, which contained freſh water. He alſo reported that he had attempted to land in another place, but was prevented by the natives, who, coming down to the boats in great numbers, attempted to take away the oars, muſkets, and in ſhort, every thing that they could lay hold of; and preſſed ſo thick upon him, that he was obliged to fire, by which one man was killed. But this unhappy circumſtance I did not know till after we had left the iſland; ſo that all my meaſures were directed as if nothing of the kind had happened.

Between three and four o'clock I went aſhore with three armed boats, to examine the water, and to try the diſpoſition of the inhabitants, ſeveral hundreds of whom were aſſembled on the beach.

The very inſtant I leaped on ſhore, the collected body of the natives all fell flat upon their faces, and remained in that very humble poſture, till, by expreſſive ſigns, I prevailed upon them to riſe. They then brought a great many ſmall pigs, which they preſented to me, with plantain trees, uſing much the ſame ceremonies that we had ſeen practiſed on ſuch occaſions at the Society and other iſlands; and a long prayer being ſpoken by a ſingle perſon, in which others of the aſſembly ſometimes joined, I expreſſed my acceptance of their proffered friendſhip, by giving them

in

in return ſuch preſents as I had brought with me from the ſhip for that purpoſe. When this introductory buſineſs was finiſhed, I ſtationed a guard upon the beach, and got ſome of the natives to conduct me to the water, which proved to be very good, and in a proper ſituation for our purpoſe. Having ſatisfied myſelf about this very eſſential point, and about the peaceable diſpoſition of the natives, I returned on board; and then gave orders that every thing ſhould be in readineſs for landing and filling our water-caſks in the morning; when again I went aſhore.

As ſoon as we landed, a trade was ſet on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the iſland gave us in exchange for nails and pieces of iron, formed into ſomething like chiſſels. We met with no obſtruction in watering; on the contrary, the natives aſſiſted our men in rolling the caſks to and from the pool; and readily performed whatever we required.

Every thing thus going on to my ſatisfaction, and conſidering my preſence on the ſpot as unneceſſary, I left the command to Mr. Williamſon, who had landed with me, and made an excurſion into the country, up the valley, accompanied by Mr. Anderſon and Mr. Webber. A numerous train of natives followed us; and one of them, whom I had diſtinguiſhed for his activity in keeping the reſt in order, I made choice of as our guide. Every one whom we met fell proſtrate upon the ground, and remained in that poſition till we had paſſed. This, as I afterwards underſtood, is the mode of paying their reſpect to their own great chiefs. As we ranged down the coaſt from the eaſt in the ſhips, we had obſerved at every village one or more elevated white objects,

like

like pyramids, or rather obeliſks; and one of theſe, which I gueſſed to be at leaſt fifty feet high, was very conſpicuous from the ſhip's anchoring ſtation, and ſeemed to be at no great diſtance up this valley. To have a nearer inſpection of it, was the principal object of my walk. The moment we got to it, we ſaw that it ſtood in a burying ground, or morai; the reſemblance of which, in many reſpects, to thoſe we were ſo well acquainted with at other iſlands in this ocean, could not but ſtrike us; and we alſo ſoon found that the ſeveral parts that compoſe it, were called by the ſame names.

After we had examined, very carefully, every thing that was to be ſeen about the morai, we returned by a different route. At noon, I went on board to dinner, having procured, in the courſe of the day, nine tuns of water; and, by exchanges, chiefly for nails and pieces of iron, about ſeventy or eighty pigs, and a few fowls. Theſe people merited our beſt commendations, never once attempting to cheat us, either aſhore or along-ſide the ſhips. Some of them, indeed, at firſt, betrayed a thieviſh diſpoſition; but they ſoon laid aſide a conduct, which, we convinced them, they could not perſevere in with impunity.

Amongſt the articles which they brought to barter this day, we could not help taking notice of a particular ſort of cloak and cap. The firſt are nearly of the ſize and ſhape of the ſhort cloaks worn by the women in England. The ground of them is a net-work, upon which the moſt beautiful red and yellow feathers are ſo cloſely fixed, that the ſurface might be compared to the thickeſt and richeſt velvet, which they reſemble, both as to the feel and the gloſſy appearance.

The

The cap is made almoſt exactly like a helmet with the middle part, or creſt, ſometimes of a hand's breadth; and it fits very cloſe upon the head, having notches to admit the ears. It is a frame of twigs and oſiers, covered with a network, into which are wrought feathers, in the ſame manner as upon the cloaks, though rather cloſer, and leſs diverſified. Theſe, probably, complete the dreſs, with the cloaks; for the natives, ſometimes, appeared in both together.

We were at a loſs to gueſs whence they could get ſuch a quantity of theſe beautiful feathers; but were ſoon informed; for they afterwards brought great numbers of ſkins of ſmall red birds for ſale.

Next day one of our viſiters, who offered ſome fiſh-hooks for ſale, was obſerved to have a very ſmall parcel tied to the ſtring of one of them, which he ſeparated with great care, and reſerved for himſelf, when he parted with the hook. Being aſked what it was, he pointed to his belly. It ſtruck us that it might be human fleſh. The queſtion being put to him, he anſwered that the fleſh was part of a man. Another of his countrymen, who ſtood by him, was then aſked, whether it was their cuſtom to eat thoſe killed in battle; and he immediately anſwered in the affirmative.

After leaving Atooi, as this iſland was named, we proceeded to Oneeheow, on the coaſt of which we anchored.

Six or ſeven canoes had come off to us, before we anchored, bringing ſome ſmall pigs and potatoes, and a good many yams and mats. The people in them reſembled thoſe of Atooi; and ſeemed to be equally well acquainted with the uſe of

iron,

iron, which they aſked for alſo by the names of hamaite and toe; parting readily with all their commodities for pieces of this precious metal.

Theſe viſiters furniſhed us with an opportunity of agitating again the curious enquiry, whether they were cannibals. One of the iſlanders, who wanted to get in at the gun-room port, was refuſed; and at the ſame time aſked whether, if he ſhould come in, we would kill and eat him? This gave a proper opening to retort the queſtion as to this practice; and a perſon behind the other, in the canoe, who paid great attention to what was paſſing, immediately anſwered, that if we were killed on ſhore, they would certainly eat us. But that their eating us would be the conſequence of our being at enmity with them. I cannot ſee the leaſt reaſon to heſitate in pronouncing it to be certain, that the horrid banquet of human fleſh is as much reliſhed here, amidſt plenty, as it is in New Zealand.

On the 30th, I ſent Mr. Gore aſhore, with a guard of marines, and a party to trade with the natives for refreſhments. The weather ſoon became very unpropitious; and the ſea ran ſo high that we had no manner of communication with our party on ſhore; and even the natives themſelves durſt not venture out to the ſhips in their canoes. In the evening of next day, I ſent the maſter in a boat up to the ſouth-eaſt head, or point of the iſland, to try if he could land under it. He returned with a favourable report; but it was too late, now, to ſend for our party till the next morning; and thus they had another night to improve their intercourſe with the natives.

Encouraged by the maſter's report, I went myſelf with the pinnace and launch up to the

point, to bring the party on board; taking with me a ram-goat and two ewes, a boar and ſow pig of the Engliſh breed; and the ſeeds of melons, pumpkins, and onions; being very deſirous of benefiting theſe poor people, by furniſhing them with ſome additional articles of food. I found my party already there, with ſome of the natives in company. To one of them, whom Mr. Gore had obſerved aſſuming ſome command, I gave the goats, pigs, and ſeeds.

The ground, through which I paſſed, was in a ſtate of nature, very ſtony, and the ſoil ſeemed poor. It was, however, covered with ſhrubs and plants, ſome of which perfumed the air with a more delicious fragrancy, than I had met with at any other of the iſlands in this ocean. The habitations of the natives were thinly ſcattered about; and it was ſuppoſed that there could not be more than five hundred people upon the iſland. Our people had an opportunity of obſerving the method of living amongſt the natives, and it appeared to be decent and cleanly. They did not, however, ſee any inſtance of the men and women eating together; and the latter ſeemed generally aſſociated in companies by themſelves. It was found that they burnt here the oily nuts of the dooe dooe for lights in the night, as at Otaheite; and that they baked their hogs in ovens. A particular veneration ſeemed to be paid here to owls, which they have very tame; and it was obſerved to be a pretty general practice amongſt them to pull out one of their teeth; for which odd cuſtom, when aſked the reaſon, the only anſwer that could be got was, that it was teeha.

On Monday the 2d of February we ſtood away to the northward, in proſecution of our voyage.

Our ſhip procured, from theſe iſlands, proviſions ſufficient for three weeks at leaſt; and Captain Clerke, more fortunate, obtained, of their vegetable productions, a ſupply that laſted his people upwards of two months.

It is worthy of obſervation, that the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean, which our late voyages have added to the geography of the globe, have been generally found lying in groups, or cluſters; the ſingle intermediate iſlands, as yet diſcovered, being few in proportion to the others; though, probably, there are many more of them ſtill unknown, which ſerve as ſteps between the ſeveral cluſters. Of what number this newly-diſcovered archipelago conſiſts, muſt be left for future inveſtigation. We ſaw five of them, whoſe names, as given to us by the natives, are Wohaoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora.

The temperature of the climate may be eaſily gueſſed from the ſituation. Were we to judge of it from our experience, it might be ſaid to be very variable; notwithſtanding it was now the ſeaſon of the year, when the weather is ſuppoſed to be moſt ſettled, the ſun being at his greateſt annual diſtance. The heat was, at this time, very moderate; and few of thoſe inconveniences, which many of thoſe tropical countries are ſubject to, either from heat or moiſture, ſeem to be experienced here.

Beſides the vegetable articles, bought by us as refreſhments, amongſt which were at leaſt five or ſix varieties of plantains, the iſland produces bread-fruit; though it ſeems to be ſcarce, as we ſaw only one tree, which was large, and had ſome fruit upon it.

The ſcarlet birds, which were brought for ſale, were never met with alive; but we ſaw a ſingle ſmall one, about the ſize of a canary-bird, of a deep crimſon colour; a large owl; two large brown hawks, or kites; and a wild duck; and it is probable there are a great many ſorts; judging by the quantity of fine yellow, green, and very ſmall velvet-like, black feathers, uſed upon the cloaks, and other ornaments, worn by the inhabitants.

Fiſh, and other marine productions, were, to appearance, not various.

The hogs, dogs, and fowls, which were the only tame or domeſtic animals that we found here, were all of the ſame kind that we met with at the South Pacific Iſlands.

The inhabitants are of a middling ſtature, firmly made. Their viſage, eſpecially amongſt the women, is ſometimes round; but we cannot ſay that they are diſtinguiſhed, as a nation, by any general caſt of countenance. Their colour is nearly of a nut-brown. The women are little more delicate than the men in their formation; and I may ſay that, with a very few exceptions, they have little claim to thoſe peculiarities that diſtinguiſh the ſex in other countries. There is, indeed, a more remarkable equality in the ſize, colour, and figure of both ſexes, than in moſt places I have viſited.

They are very expert ſwimmers. It was very common to ſee women with infants at the breaſt, when the ſurf was ſo high that they could not land in the canoes, leap overboard, and, without endangering their little ones, ſwim to the ſhore through a ſea that looked dreadful.

They ſeem to be bleſt with a frank, cheerful diſpoſition; they live very ſociably in their intercourſe

tercourſe with one another; and, except the propenſity to thieving, which ſeems innate in moſt of the people we have viſited in this ocean, they were exceedingly friendly to us. It was a pleaſure to obſerve with how much affection the women manage their infants, and how readily the men lent their aſſiſtance to ſuch a tender office; thus ſufficiently diſtinguiſhing themſelves from thoſe ſavages, who eſteem a wife and child as things rather neceſſary than deſirable, or worthy of their notice.

Though they ſeem to have adopted the mode of living in villages, there is no appearance of defence, or fortification, near any of them; and the houſes are ſcattered about without any order. Some are large and commodious, from forty to fifty feet long, and twenty or thirty broad, while others of them are mere hovels. They are well thatched with long graſs, which is laid on ſlender poles, diſpoſed with ſome regularity. The entrance is made indifferently in the end or ſide, and is an oblong hole, ſo low, that one muſt rather creep than walk in. No light enters the houſe, but by this opening; and though ſuch cloſe habitations may afford a comfortable retreat in bad weather, they ſeem but ill adapted to the warmth of the climate. Of animal food they can be in no want, as they have abundance of hogs, which run without reſtraint about the houſes; and if they eat dogs, which is not improbable, their ſtock of theſe ſeemed to be very conſiderable. The great number of fiſhing-hooks found amongſt them, ſhewed that they derived no inconſiderable ſupply of animal food from the ſea.

They bake their vegetable food with heated ſtones, in the ſame manner as the inhabitants of

the ſouthern iſlands. The only artificial diſh we met with, was a taro pudding; which, though a diſagreeable meſs, from its ſourneſs, was greedily devoured by the natives.

In every thing manufactured by theſe people, there appears to be an uncommon degree of neatneſs and ingenuity. Their cloth, which is the principal manufacture, is made from the morus papyrifera; and doubtleſs in the ſame manner as at Otaheite and Tongataboo; in colouring or ſtaining it, the people of Atooi diſplay a ſuperiority of taſte, by the endleſs variation of figures which they execute.

They fabricate a great many white mats, which are ſtrong, with many red ſtripes, rhombuſes, and other figures interwoven on one ſide; and often pretty large.

They ſtain their gourd-ſhells prettily with undulated lines, triangles, and other figures of a black colour; inſtances of which we ſaw practiſed at New Zealand. Their wooden diſhes and bowls, out of which they drink their ava, are of the etooa-tree, or cordia, as neat as if made in our turning-lathe, and perhaps better poliſhed. A great variety of fiſhing-hooks are ingeniouſly made of pearl ſhell. One fiſhing-hook was procured, nine inches long, of a ſingle piece of bone, which doubtleſs belonged to ſome large fiſh. The elegant form and poliſh of this could not certainly be outdone by any European artiſt, even if he ſhould add all his knowledge in deſign to the number and convenience of his tools.

The only iron tools, or rather bits of iron, ſeen amongſt them, and which they had before our arrival, were a piece of iron hoop, about two inches long, fitted into a wooden handle; and another

edge-

edge-tool, which our people gueſſed to be made of the point of a broad-ſword. How they came by them I cannot account for.

Though I did not ſee a chief of any note, there were, however, ſeveral, as the natives informed us, who reſide upon Atooi, and to whom they proſtrate themſelves as a mark of ſubmiſſion. After I had left the iſland, one of the chiefs made his appearance, and paid a viſit to Captain Clerke on board the Diſcovery. His attendants helped him into the ſhip, and placed him on the gang-way. Their care of him did not ceaſe then; for they ſtood round him, holding each other by the hands; nor would they ſuffer any one to come near him but Captain Clerke himſelf. He was a young man, clothed from head to foot, accompanied by a young woman, ſuppoſed to be his wife. His name was ſaid to be Tamahano. Captain Clerke made him ſome ſuitable preſents; and received from him, in return, a large bowl, ſupported by two figures of men, the carving of which, both as to the deſign and the execution, ſhewed ſome degree of ſkill.

In their language they had not only adopted the ſoft mode of the Otaheiteans in avoiding harſh ſounds, but the whole idiom of their language; uſing not only the ſame affixes and ſuffixes to their words, but the ſame meaſure and cadence in their ſongs; though in a manner ſomewhat leſs agreeable.

How happy would Lord Anſon have been, and what hardſhips would he have avoided, if he had known that there was a group of iſlands, halfway between America and Tinian, where all his wants could have been effectually ſupplied; and in deſcribing which, the elegant hiſtorian of that

voyage, would have preſented his reader with a more agreeable picture than I have been able to draw.

On the 2d of February, we ſtood away to the northward, and without meeting with any thing memorable, on the 7th of March, the long-looked for coaſt of New Albion * was ſeen, extending from north-eaſt to ſouth-eaſt, diſtant ten or twelve leagues. The land appeared to be of a moderate height, diverſified with hills and valleys, and almoſt every where covered with wood.

After coaſting along, and combating contrary winds, on the 29th we anchored in eighty-five fathoms water, ſo near the ſhore as to reach it with a hawſer.

We no ſooner drew near the inlet, than we found the coaſt to be inhabited; and three canoes came off to the ſhip. In one of theſe were two men, in another ſix, and in the third ten. Having come pretty near us, a perſon in one of the two laſt ſtood up, and made a long harangue, inviting us to land, as we gueſſed by his geſtures. At the ſame time he kept ſtrewing handfuls of feathers towards us; and ſome of his companions threw handfuls of red duſt or powder in the ſame manner. The perſon who performed the office of orator, wore the ſkin of ſome animal, and held, in each hand, ſomething which rattled as he kept ſhaking it. After tiring himſelf with his repeated exhortations, of which we did not underſtand a word, he was quiet. After the tumultuous oration had ceaſed, one of them ſung a very agreeable air, with a degree of ſoftneſs and me-

* This part of the weſt ſide of North America, was ſo named by Sir Francis Drake.

lody

body which we could not have expected. In a ſhort time the canoes began to come off in great numbers; and we had, at one time, thirty-two of them near the ſhip, carrying from three to ſeven or eight perſons each, both men and women. Several of theſe ſtood up in their canoes haranguеing, and making geſtures after the manner of our firſt viſiters. One canoe was remarkable for a ſingular head, which had a bird's eye and bill, of an enormous ſize, painted on it; and a perſon who was in it, who ſeemed to be a chief, was no leſs remarkable for his uncommon appearance; having many feathers hanging from his head, and being painted in an extroardinary manner. He held in his hands a carved bird of wood, as large as a pigeon, with which he rattled, as the perſon firſt-mentioned had done; and was no leſs vociferous in his harangue, which was attended with ſome expreſſive geſtures.

Though our viſiters behaved very peaceably, and could not be ſuſpected of any hoſtile intention, we could not prevail upon any of them to come on board. They ſhewed great readineſs, however, to part with any thing they had, and took from us whatever we offered them in exchange; but were more deſirous of iron than of any other of our articles of commerce, appearing to be perfectly acquainted with the uſe of that metal. Many of the canoes followed us to our anchoring-place; and a group of about ten or a dozen of them remained along-ſide the Reſolution moſt part of the night.

Theſe circumſtances gave us a reaſonable ground of hope, that we ſhould find this a comfortable ſtation to ſupply all our wants, and to make us forget the hardſhips and delays experienced

enced during a conſtant ſucceſſion of adverſe winds and boiſterous weather, almoſt continual ſince our arrival upon the coaſt of America.

Next morning, I loſt no time in endeavouring to find a commodious harbour where we might ſtation ourſelves during our continuance. I had very little trouble in finding what we wanted. On the north-weſt of the arm we were now in, and not far from the ſhips, I met with a convenient, ſnug cove, well ſuited for our purpoſe.

A great many canoes, filled with the natives, were about the ſhips all day; and a trade commenced betwixt us and them, which was carried on with the ſtricteſt honeſty on both ſides. The articles which they offered to ſale were ſkins of various animals, ſuch as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, racoons, polecats, martins; and, in particular, the ſea otters, which are found at the iſlands eaſt of Kamtſchatka. Beſides the ſkins in their native ſhape, they alſo brought garments made of them, and another ſort of clothing made of the bark of a tree, or ſome plant like hemp; weapons, ſuch as bows, arrows, and ſpears; fiſh-hooks, and inſtruments of various kinds; wooden vizors of many different monſtrous figures; a ſort of woollen ſtuff, blanketing; bags filled with red ochre, pieces of carved work, beads, and ſeveral other little ornaments of thin braſs and iron, ſhaped like a horſeſhoe, which they hang at their noſes; and ſeveral chiſſels, or pieces of iron, fixed to handles. From their poſſeſſing which metals, we could infer that they had either been viſited by ſome civilized nation, or had connections with tribes on their continent, who had communication with them. But the moſt extraordinary of all the articles, which they brought to the ſhips

for

for ſale, were human ſkulls, and hands not yet quite ſtripped of the fleſh, which they made our people plainly underſtand they had eaten; and indeed, ſome of them had evident marks that they had been upon the fire. We had but too much reaſon to ſuſpect, from this circumſtance, that the horrid practice of feeding on their enemies was prevalent here. For the various articles which they brought, they took in exchange knives, chiſſels, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glaſſes, buttons, or any kind of metal. Glaſs beads they were not fond of; and cloth of every ſort they rejected.

If they had any diſtruſt or fear of us at firſt, they now appeared to have laid it aſide; for they came on board the ſhips, and mixed with our people with the greateſt freedom. We ſoon diſcovered that they were as light-fingered as any of our friends in the iſlands we had viſited in the courſe of the voyage. And they were far more dangerous thieves; for, poſſeſſing ſharp iron inſtruments, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or any other piece of iron from a rope, the inſtant that our backs were turned. If we miſſed a thing immediately after it had been ſtolen, we found little difficulty in detecting the thief, as they were ready enough to impeach one another. But the guilty perſon generally relinquiſhed his prize with reluctance; and ſometimes we found it neceſſary to have recourſe to force.

A conſiderable number of the natives viſited us daily; and, every now and then, we ſaw new faces. On their firſt coming, they generally went through a ſingular mode of introducing themſelves. They would paddle, with all their ſtrength, quite round both ſhips, a chief, or other principal perſon in the canoe, ſtanding up with a

ſpear,

ſpear, or ſome other weapon, in his hand, and ſpeaking, or rather hallooing, all the time. Sometimes the orator of the canoe would have his face covered with a maſk, repreſenting either a human viſage, or that of ſome animal; and, inſtead of a weapon, would hold a rattle in his hand, as before deſcribed. After making this circuit round the ſhips, they would come along-ſide, and begin to trade without farther ceremony.

During theſe viſits, they gave us no other trouble, than to guard againſt their thieviſh tricks. But, in the morning of the 4th of April, we had a ſerious alarm. Our party on ſhore, who were employed in cutting wood and filling water, obſerved that the natives all around them were arming themſelves in the beſt manner they could; preparing ſticks, and collecting ſtones. On hearing this, I thought it prudent to arm alſo. However, our fears were ill-grounded; theſe hoſtile preparations were not directed againſt us, but againſt a body of their own countrymen, who were coming to fight them; and our friends of the ſound, on obſerving our apprehenſions, uſed their beſt endeavours to convince us that this was the caſe. At length the difference, whatever it was, ſeemed to be compromiſed; but the ſtrangers were not allowed to come along-ſide the ſhips, nor to have any trade or intercourſe with us. Probably we were the cauſe of the quarrel.

We reſumed our work in the afternoon, and continued the repairs of the veſſels without interruption, and other neceſſary buſineſs.

Bad weather now came on; but that did not, however, hinder the natives from viſiting us daily. They frequently brought us a tolerable ſupply of fiſh, either ſardines, or what reſembled them

them much, a ſmall kind of bream, and ſometimes ſmall cod.

On the 18th, a party of ſtrangers, in ſix or eight canoes, came into the cove, where they remained looking at us for ſome time, and then retired without coming along-ſide either ſhip. We ſuppoſed that our old friends, who were more numerous about us than theſe new viſiters, would not permit them to have any intercourſe with us. We alſo found that many of the principal natives, who liyed near us, carried on a trade with more diſtant tribes, in the articles they had procured from us. For we obſerved that they would frequently diſappear for four or five days at a time, and then return with freſh cargoes of ſkins and curioſities, which our people were ſo paſſionately fond of, that they always came to a good market. Nothing would go down with our viſiters but metal; and braſs had by this time ſupplanted iron; being ſo eagerly ſought after, that, before we left this place, hardly a bit of it was left in the ſhips, except what belonged to our neceſſary inſtruments. Whole ſuits of clothes were ſtripped of every button; bureaus of their furniture; and copper kettles, tin caniſters, candleſticks, and the like, all went to wreck.

After a fortnight's bad weather, the 19th proving a fair day, we availed ourſelves of it, to get up the topmaſts and yards, and to fix up the rigging. And, having now finiſhed moſt of our heavy work, I ſet out next morning to take a view of the ſound. I firſt went to the weſt point, where I found a large village. The people received me very courteouſly. In moſt of the houſes were women at work, making dreſſes of the plant or bark before mentioned, which they

executed

executed exactly in the same manner that the New Zealanders manufacture their cloth. Others were occupied in opening and curing fish.

I now found, by traversing a few miles west of this village, what I had before conjectured, that the land, under which the ships lay, was an island; and that there were many smaller ones lying scattered in the sound, on the west of it. Opposite the north end of our island, upon the main land, I observed a village, and there I landed. The inhabitants of it were not so polite as those of the other. But this cold reception seemed owing to one surly chief, who would not let me enter their houses, following me wherever I went; and several times, by expressive signs, marking his impatience that I should be gone. Some of the young women, better pleased with us than was their inhospitable chief, dressed themselves expeditiously in their best apparel, and welcomed us, by joining in a song, which was far from disagreeable.

The day being now far spent, I proceeded for the ships. When I got on board, I was informed that while I was absent, they had been visited by some strangers, who, by signs, made our people understand that they had come from the south-east, beyond the bay. They brought several skins, garments, and other articles, which they bartered. But what was most singular, two silver table spoons were purchased from them, which, from their peculiar shape, we supposed to be of Spanish manufacture. One of these strangers wore them round his neck, by way of ornament.

Captain Clerke and I went in the forenoon of next, day with two boats, to the village at the west point of the sound. When I was there, the

day

day before, I had obſerved that plenty of graſs grew near it; and it was neceſſary to lay in a quantity of this, for the few goats and ſheep which were ſtill left on board. The inhabitants received us with the ſame demonſtrations of friendſhip which I had experienced before; and the moment we landed, I ordered ſome of my people to begin their operation of cutting. I had not the leaſt imagination that the natives could make any objection to our furniſhing ourſelves with what ſeemed to be of no uſe to them, but was neceſſary for us. However, I was miſtaken; for the moment that our men began to cut, ſome of the inhabitants interpoſed, and would not permit them to proceed, ſaying they muſt "makook;" that is, muſt firſt buy it. I bargained with them for it, and thought that we were now at liberty to cut wherever we pleaſed. But here again I was under a miſtake; for the liberal manner in which I had paid the firſt pretended proprietors, brought freſh demands upon me from others; and ſo many of them were to be ſatisfied, that I very ſoon emptied my pockets. When they found that I really had nothing more to give, their importunities ceaſed, and we were permitted to cut wherever we pleaſed, and as much as we choſe to carry away.

Every thing being now ready, in the morning of the 26th, I intended to have put to ſea; but both wind and tide being againſt us, was obliged to continue where we were. At four o'clock in the afternoon, we had every forerunner of an approaching ſtorm; this made me heſitate a little, whether I ſhould venture to ſail, or wait till the next morning. But my anxious impatience to

ceed upon the voyage, made me determine to put to ſea at all events.

Our friends, the natives attended us, till we were almoſt out of the ſound; ſome on board the ſhips, and others in their canoes. To one of their chiefs, who had attached himſelf to me, I preſented a new broad-ſword, with a braſs hilt; the poſſeſſion of which made him completely happy. I make no doubt that whoever comes after me to this place, will find the natives prepared with no inconſiderable ſupply of ſkins; an article of trade which, they could obſerve, we were eager to poſſeſs, and which we found could be purchaſed to great advantage.

On my arrival in this inlet, I had honoured it with the name of King George's Sound; but I afterwards found, that it is called Nootka by the natives. The harbours and anchoring places, within its circuit, are numerous.

The land bordering upon the ſeacoaſt is of a middling height and level; but within the ſound it riſes almoſt every where into ſteep hills, which agree in their general formation, ending in round or blunted tops, with ſome ſharp, though not very prominent, ridges on their ſides. Some of theſe hills may be reckoned high.

The trees, which chiefly compoſe the woods, are the Canadian pine, white cypreſs, cypreſſus thyoides, the wild pine, with two or three other ſorts of pine leſs common.

As the ſeaſon was advancing very faſt, and our neceſſary repairs took up all our time, excurſions of every kind, either on the land or by water, were never attempted. And as we lay in a cove on an iſland, no other animals were ever ſeen

alive

alive in the woods, than two or three racoons, martins, and ſquirrels. The account, therefore, that we can give of the quadrupeds, is taken from the ſkins which the natives brought to ſell.

Of theſe, the moſt common were bears, deer, foxes, and wolves. The bear-ſkins were in great numbers; few of them very large; but in general of a ſhining black colour. The deer-ſkins were ſcarcer; and they ſeem to belong to that ſort called the fallow-deer by the hiſtorians of Carolina; though Mr. Pennant thinks it quite a different ſpecies from ours, and diſtinguiſhes it by the name of Virginian deer. The foxes are in great plenty, and of ſeveral varieties; ſome yellow, ſome red, ſome white, and ſome black. Beſides the common ſort of martin, the pine-martin is here; and the ermine is alſo found at this place. The racoons and ſquirrels are of the common ſort.

Hogs, dogs, and goats, have not as yet found their way to this place. Nor do the natives ſeem to have any knowledge of our brown rats, to which, when they ſaw them on board the ſhips, they applied the name they give to ſquirrels.

The ſea animals, ſeen off the coaſt, were whales, porpoiſes, and ſeals. The laſt of theſe ſeem only of the common ſort, judging from the ſkins which we ſaw here.

Sea-otters, which live moſtly in the water, are found here. The fur of theſe animals, as mentioned in the Ruſſian accounts, is certainly ſofter and finer than that of any others we know of; and therefore the diſcovery of this part of the continent of North America, where ſo valuable

an article of commerce may be met with, cannot be a matter of indifference *.

Birds, in general, are not only rare as to the different ſpecies, but very ſcarce as to numbers; and theſe few are ſo ſhy, that, in all probability, they are continually haraſſed by the natives; perhaps for food; certainly to get poſſeſſion of their feathers, which they uſe as ornaments. Thoſe which frequent the woods, are crows and ravens, not at all different from our Engliſh ones; a bluiſh jay or magpie, common wrens, which are the only ſinging bird that we heard; the Canadian or emigrating thruſh; and a conſiderable number of brown eagles, with white heads and tails; which, though they ſeem principally to frequent the coaſt, come into the ſound in bad weather, and ſometimes perch upon the trees.

The birds which frequent the waters and the ſhores, are not more numerous than the others. Quebrantahueſſoſes, gulls, and ſhags, were ſeen off the coaſt; and the two laſt alſo frequent the ſound; they are of the common ſorts. We obſerved wild ducks in conſiderable flocks; and the greater lumme, or diver, found in our northern countries. There were alſo ſeen, once or twice, ſome ſwans flying acroſs the ſound.

Fiſh are more plentiful in quantity than birds, though the variety is not very great; and yet, from ſeveral circumſtances, it is probable, that even the variety is conſiderably increaſed at certain ſeaſons.

* Mr. Coxe, on the authority of Mr. Pallas, informs us that the old and middle-aged ſea-otter ſkins are ſold at Kiachta, by the Ruſſians to the Chineſe, from eighty to one hundred rubles a ſkin; that is from ſixteen to twenty pounds each. See Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries.

As

As to the mineral ſubſtances in this country, though we found both iron and copper, there is little reaſon to believe that either of them belong to the place.

The perſons of the natives are in general under the common ſtature; but not ſlender in proportion, being commonly pretty full or plump, though not muſcular. The viſage of moſt of them is round and full; and ſometimes alſo broad, with high prominent cheeks; and above theſe the face is frequently much depreſſed; the noſe alſo flattening at its baſe, with pretty wide noſtrils, and a rounded point. The forehead rather low; the eyes ſmall, black, and rather languiſhing than ſparkling; the mouth round, with large round thickiſh lips; the teeth tolerably equal and well ſet, but not remarkably white. Their eyebrows are ſcanty, and always narrow; but the hair of the head is in great abundance, very coarſe and ſtrong, and without a ſingle exception, black, ſtraight, and lank, or hanging down over the ſhoulders.

Their colour we could never poſitively determine, as their bodies were incruſted with paint and dirt; though in particular caſes, when theſe were well rubbed off, the whiteneſs of the ſkin appeared almoſt to equal that of Europeans.

The women are nearly of the ſame ſize, colour, and form, with the men; from whom it is not eaſy to diſtinguiſh them, as they poſſeſs no natural delicacies ſufficient to render their perſons agreeable.

Their common dreſs is a flaxen garment, or mantle, ornamented on the upper edge by a narrow ſtrip of fur, and at the lower edge, by fringes or taſſels; it is tied over the ſhoulders. Over

this, which reaches below the knees, is worn a ſmall cloak of the ſame ſubſtance, likewiſe fringed at the lower part. In ſhape, this reſembles a round diſh cover, being quite cloſe, except in the middle, where there is a hole juſt large enough to admit the head.

Beſides the above dreſs, which is common to both ſexes, the men frequently throw over their other garments the ſkin of a bear, wolf, or ſea-otter, with the hair outward, and tie it as a cloak, near the upper part, wearing it ſometimes before, and ſometimes behind. Their dreſs would by no means be inelegant, were it kept clean. But as they rub their bodies conſtantly over with red paint, of a clayey, or coarſe ochre ſubſtance, mixed with oil, their garments by this means contract a rancid offenſive ſmell, and a greaſy naſtineſs; ſo that they make a very wretched dirty appearance.

The ears of many of them are perforated in the lobe, where they make a pretty large hole; and two others higher up on the outer edge. In theſe holes they hang bits of bone; quills fixed upon a leathern thong, ſmall ſhells, bunches of woollen taſſels, or pieces of thin copper, which our beads could never ſupplant. The ſeptum of the noſe, in many, is alſo perforated, through which they draw a piece of ſoft cord; and others wear at the ſame place, ſmall thin pieces of iron, braſs, or copper, ſhaped almoſt like a horſeſhoe, the narrow opening of which receives the ſeptum, ſo that the two points may gently pinch it; and the ornament thus hangs over the upper lip. The rings of our braſs buttons, which they eagerly purchaſed, were appropriated to this uſe.

Sometimes they wear carved wooden maſks, or vizors, applied on the face, or to the upper part

of

of the head, or forehead. Some of theſe reſemble human faces, furniſhed with hair, beards, and eyebrows; others the heads of birds, particularly of eagles and quebrantahueſſoſes; and many, the heads of land and ſea animals, ſuch as wolves, deer, porpoiſes, and others. So fond are they of theſe diſguiſes, that I have ſeen one of them put his head into a tin kettle he had got from us, for want of another ſort of maſk. Whether they uſe theſe extravagant maſquerade ornaments on any particular religious occaſion or diverſion, or whether they be put on to intimidate their enemies when they go to battle, by their monſtrous appearance, or as decoys when they go to hunt animals, is uncertain.

Though there be but too much reaſon, from their bringing to ſale human ſkulls and bones, to infer that they treat their enemies with a degree of brutal cruelty, this circumſtance rather marks a general agreement of character with that of almoſt every tribe of uncivilized men, in every age, and in every part of the globe, than that they are to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity. They ſeem to be a docile, courteous, good-natured people.

When diſpleaſed, they are exceedingly violent; but they are ſoon pacified. Their curioſity appears, in ſome meaſure, to lie dormant. For few expreſſed any deſire to ſee or examine things wholly unknown to them; and which, to thoſe truly poſſeſſed of that paſſion, would have appeared aſtoniſhing. They were always contented to procure the articles they knew and wanted, regarding every thing elſe with great indifference; nor did our perſons, apparel, and manners, ſo different from their own, or even the extraordinary

ſize and conſtruction of our ſhips, ſeem to excite admiration, or even engage attention.

The only inſtruments of muſic, (if ſuch they may be called) which I ſaw amongſt them, were a rattle, and a ſmall whiſtle with one hole only. They uſe the rattle when they ſing; but upon what occaſions they uſe the whiſtle I know not; unleſs it be when they dreſs themſelves like particular animals, and endeavour to imitate their howl or cry. I once ſaw one of them dreſſed in a wolf's ſkin, with the head over his own, and imitating that animal by making a ſqueaking noiſe with one of theſe whiſtles, which he had in his mouth.

The houſes are diſpoſed in three ranges or rows, riſing gradually behind each other; the largeſt being that in front, and the others leſs. Though there be ſome appearance of regularity in this diſpoſition, there is none in the ſingle houſes. The height of the ſides and ends of theſe habitations is ſeven or eight feet; the back part is higher than the front, by which means the planks that compoſe the roof ſlant forward; they are laid on looſe, and are moved to let out ſmoke, and admit air or light. There are holes, or windows, in the ſides of the houſes to look out at, but without any regularity of ſhape or diſpoſition; and theſe have bits of mat hung before them, to prevent the rain getting in.

Their furniture conſiſts chiefly of a great number of cheſts and boxes of all ſizes, which are generally piled upon each other, cloſe to the ſides or ends of the houſe; and contain their ſpare garments, ſkins, maſks, and other things, which they ſet a value upon. Their other domeſtic utenſils are moſtly ſquare and oblong pails or

buckets

buckets to hold water and other things; round wooden cups and bowls, and ſmall ſhallow wooden troughs, about two feet long, out of which they eat their food; and baſkets of twigs, bags of matting, fiſhing implements, &c.

The naſtineſs and ſtench of their houſes are, however, at leaſt equal to the confuſion. But amidſt all the filth and confuſion that are found in the houſes, many of them are decorated with images. Theſe are nothing more than the trunks of very large trees, four or five feet high, ſet up ſingly, or by pairs, at the upper end of the apartment, with the front carved into a human face; the arms and hands cut out upon the ſides, and variouſly painted; ſo that the whole is a truly monſtrous figure. The general name of theſe images is Klumna; and the names of two particular ones, which ſtood abreaſt of each other, three or four feet aſunder, in one of the houſes, were Natchkoa and Matſeeta. A mat, by way of curtain, for the moſt part hung before them, which the natives were not willing at all times to remove; and when they did unveil them, they ſeemed to ſpeak of them in a very myſterious manner.

It was natural, from theſe circumſtances, for us to think, that they were repreſentatives of their gods; and yet we had proofs of the little real eſtimation they were in; for, with a ſmall quantity of iron or braſs, I could have purchaſed all the gods in the place; and I actually got two or three of the very ſmalleſt ſort.

The chief employment of the men, is fiſhing and killing land or ſea animals. The women are occupied in manufacturing their flaxen or woollen garments, and in preparing the ſardines for drying.

drying. The young men appeared to be the moſt indolent or idle ſet in this community; for they were either ſitting in ſcattered companies, to baſk themſelves in the ſun, or lay wallowing in the ſand upon the beach, like a number of hogs, for the ſame purpoſe, without any covering. But this diſregard of decency was confined to the men. The women were always properly clothed, and behaved with the utmoſt propriety; juſtly deſerving all commendation, for a baſhfulneſs and modeſty becoming their ſex; but more meritorious in them, as the men ſeem to have no ſenſe of ſhame.

Their weapons are bows and arrows, ſlings, ſpears, ſhort truncheons of bone, ſomewhat like the patoo patoo of New Zealand, and a ſmall pickaxe, not unlike the common American tomahawk. The tomahawk is a ſtone ſix or eight inches long, pointed at one end, and the other end fixed into a handle of wood; which reſembles the head and neck of the human figure; and the ſtone is fixed in the mouth, ſo as to repreſent an enormouſly large tongue.

From the number of ſtone weapons, and others, we might almoſt conclude, that it is their cuſtom to engage in cloſe fight; and we had too convincing proofs that their wars are both frequent and bloody, from the vaſt number of human ſkulls which they brought to ſell.

Their manufactures and mechanic arts are far more extenſive and ingenious, whether we regard the deſign or the execution, than could have been expected from the natural diſpoſition of the people, and the little progreſs that civilization has made amongſt them in other reſpects. The garments with which they cover themſelves, muſt

neceſſarily

neceſſarily engage their firſt care; and are the moſt material of thoſe that can be ranked under the head of manufactures. They are made of the bark of a pine tree, beat into a hempen ſtate. It is not ſpun; but, after being properly prepared, is ſpread upon a ſtick, which is faſtened acroſs to two others that ſtand upright. It is diſpoſed in ſuch a manner that the manufacturer, who ſits on her hams at this ſimple machine, knots it acroſs with ſmall plaited threads, at the diſtance of half an inch from each other. Though by this method it be not ſo cloſe or firm as cloth that is woven, the bunches between the knots make it ſufficiently impervious to the air, by filling the interſtices; and it has the additional advantage of being ſofter and more pliable.

Their taſte or deſign in working figures upon their garments, correſponds with their fondneſs for carving in every thing they make of wood. The imitative arts being nearly allied, no wonder that to their ſkill in working figures in their garments, and carving them in wood, they ſhould add that of drawing them in colours. We have, ſometimes, ſeen the whole proceſs of their whale fiſhery painted on the caps they wear. This, though rudely executed, ſerves, at leaſt, to ſhew that they have ſome notion of a method of commemorating and repreſenting actions in a laſting way.

Their canoes are of a ſimple ſtructure; but to appearance well calculated for every uſeful purpoſe. Even the largeſt, which carry twenty people or more, are formed of one tree. Many of them are forty feet long, ſeven broad, and about three deep. For the moſt part they are without any ornament; but ſome have a little carving,

and are decorated by ſetting ſeals' teeth on the ſurface like ſtuds; as is the practice on their maſks and weapons. A few have likewiſe a kind of additional head or prow, like a large cut-water, which is painted with the figure of ſome animal.

Their principal tools are the chiſſel and the knife. The chiſſel is a long flat piece, fitted into a handle of wood. A ſtone ſerves for a mallet, and a piece of fiſh-ſkin for a poliſher. I have ſeen ſome of theſe chiſſels that were eight or ten inches long, and three or four inches broad; but in general they were ſmaller. The knives are of various ſizes, ſome very large.

Iron, which they call ſeekemaile (which name they alſo give to tin, and all white metals) is familiar to them. Yet we never obſerved the leaſt ſign of their having ſeen ſhips like ours before, nor of their having traded with ſuch people. They expreſſed no marks of ſurpriſe at ſeeing our ſhips; nor were they even ſtartled at the report of a muſket; till one day, upon their endeavouring to make us ſenſible that their arrows and ſpears could not penetrate the hide-dreſſes, one of our gentlemen ſhot a muſket ball through one of them, folded ſix times. At this they were ſo much ſtaggered, that they plainly diſcovered their ignorance of the effect of firearms. This was very often confirmed afterward, when we uſed them at their village, and other places, to ſhoot birds, the manner of which plainly confounded them.

The moſt probable way, by which we can ſuppoſe that they get their iron, is by trading for it with the other Indian tribes, who either have immediate communication with European ſettle-

ments

ments upon that continent, or receive it, perhaps, through ſeveral intermediate nations. The ſame might be ſaid of the braſs and copper found amongſt them.

We could obſerve that there are ſuch men as chiefs, who are diſtinguiſhed by the name or title of Acweek, and to whom the others are, in ſome meaſure, ſubordinate. But I ſhould gueſs the authority of each of theſe great men extends no farther than the family to which he belongs, and who own him as their head. Theſe Acweeks were not always elderly men; from which I concluded, that this title came to them by inheritance.

Their language is by no means harſh or diſagreeable, farther than proceeds from their uſing the k and h with more force, or pronouncing them with leſs ſoftneſs, than we do. They have one ſound, which is very frequent, and not uſed by us. It is formed in a particular manner, by claſhing their tongue partly againſt the roof of the mouth. It is difficult to repreſent this ſound by any compoſition of our letters, unleſs from lſzthl: it is generally uſed as a termination.

Subjoined is a ſpecimen of their numerals:

Tſawack,	One.
Akkla,	Two.
Katſitſa,	Three.
Mo, *or* moo,	Four.
Sochah,	Five.
Nofpo,	Six.
Atſlepoo,	Seven.
Atlaquolthl,	Eight.
Tſawaquulthl,	Nine.
Haeeoo,	Ten.

On quitting the ſound, I bore away, ſteering north-weſt; in which direction I ſuppoſed the coaſt to lie. At half paſt one in the afternoon, it blew a perfect hurricane, ſo that I judged it highly dangerous to run any longer before it, and therefore brought the ſhips to. At this time the Reſolution ſprung a leak. It was no ſooner diſcovered than the fiſh-room was found to be full of water, and the caſks in it afloat; but this was in a great meaſure owing to the water not finding its way to the pumps through the coals that lay at the bottom of the room. For after the water was baled out, which employed us till midnight, and had found its way directly from the leak to the pumps, it appeared that one pump kept it under, which gave us no ſmall ſatisfaction.

At ſeven in the evening, on the 1ſt of May, we got ſight of the land, which abounds with hills, but one conſiderably out-tops the reſt; this I called Mount Edgcumbe. It was wholly covered with ſnow; as were alſo all the other elevated hills; but the lower ones, and the flatter ſpots, bordering upon the ſea, were free from it, and covered with wood.

On the 3d, we ſaw a large inlet, diſtant ſix leagues; and the moſt advanced point of the land, lying under a very high peaked mountain, which obtained the name of Mount Fair Weather. The inlet was named Croſs Sound, as being firſt on that day ſo marked in our calendar.

From the 4th to the 10th, nothing very intereſting occurred. On the 10th, we found ourſelves no more than three leagues from the coaſt of the continent, which extended as far as the eye could reach. To the weſtward of this laſt

direction

direction was an iſland, that extended from north to ſouth, diſtant ſix leagues. A point ſhoots out from the main toward the north-eaſt end of the iſland, about five or ſix leagues diſtant. This point I named Cape Suckling.

On the 11th, I bore up for the iſland. At ten o'clock in the morning, I went in a boat, and landed upon it, with a view of ſeeing what lay on the other ſide; but finding it farther to the hills than I expected, and the way being ſteep and woody, I was obliged to drop the deſign. At the foot of a tree, on a little eminence not far from the ſhore, I left a bottle, with a paper in it, on which were inſcribed the names of the ſhips, and the date of our diſcovery. And along with it I incloſed two ſilver twopenny pieces of his majeſty's coin, of the date 1772. Theſe, with many others, were furniſhed me by the Rev. Dr. Kaye (now Dean of Lincoln) and, as a mark of my eſteem and regard for that gentleman, I named the iſland after him Kaye's Iſland. It is eleven or twelve leagues in length; but its breadth is not above a league, or a league and a half, in any part of it.

On this iſland there are a conſiderable number of pines, and the whole ſeems covered with a broad girdle of wood. In the paſſage from the ſhip to the ſhore, we ſaw a great many fowls ſitting upon the water, or flying about in flocks or pairs; the chief of which were a few quebrantahueſſoſes; divers; ducks or large peterels; gulls, ſhags, and burres. At the place where we landed, a fox came from the verge of the wood, and eyed us with very little emotion, walking leiſurely without any ſigns of fear. He was of a reddiſh-yellow colour, like ſome of the ſkins we bought at Nootka, but not of a large ſize.

We were now threatened with a fog and a ſtorm; and I wanted to get into ſome place to ſtop the leak, before we encountered another gale. Theſe reaſons induced me to ſteer for an inlet, which we had no ſooner reached, than the weather became ſo foggy, that we could not ſee a mile before us, and it became neceſſary to ſecure the ſhips in ſome place, to wait for a clearer ſky. With this view, I hauled cloſe under a cape, which I now called Cape Hinchinbroke, and anchored before a ſmall cove, a little within the cape, and about a quarter of a mile from the ſhore.

At ſome ſhort intervals, the fog cleared away, and gave us a ſight of the lands around us. The weſternmoſt point we had in ſight on the north ſhore, bore north north-weſt half weſt, two leagues diſtant. Between this point and the ſhore, under which we were at anchor, is a bay about three leagues deep; on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of which there are two or three coves, ſuch as that before in which we had anchored; and in the middle ſome rocky iſlands.

To theſe iſlands Mr. Gore was ſent in a boat, in hopes of ſhooting ſome eatable birds. But he hardly got to them, before about twenty natives made their appearance in two large canoes; on which he thought proper to return to the ſhips, and they followed him. They would not venture along-ſide, but kept at ſome diſtance, hallooing aloud, and alternately claſping and extending their arms; and, in a ſhort time, began a kind of ſong exactly after the manner of thoſe at Nootka. Their heads were alſo powdered with feathers. One man held out a white garment, which we interpreted as a ſign of friendſhip;

ſhip; and another ſtood up in the canoe, quite naked, for almoſt a quarter of an hour, with his arms ſtretched out like a croſs, and motionleſs. Though we returned all their ſigns of friendſhip, and by every expreſſive geſture, tried to encourage them to come along-ſide, we could not prevail.

At ten o'clock next morning we got under ſail, in order to look out for ſome place, where we might ſearch for, and ſtop the leak; our preſent ſtation being too much expoſed for this purpoſe.

The natives, who viſited us the preceding evening, came off again in the morning, in five or ſix canoes; but not till we were under ſail; and, although they followed us for ſome time, they could not get up with us. At eight o'clock the violence of the ſqualls obliged us to anchor in a bay.

The weather, bad as it was, did not hinder three of the natives from paying us a viſit. The treatment theſe men met with, induced many more to viſit us, between one and two the next morning, in both great and ſmall canoes. A few ventured on board the ſhip, but not till ſome of our people had ſtepped into their boats. Amongſt thoſe, who came on board, was a good-looking, middle-aged man, whom we afterwards found to be the chief. He was clothed in a dreſs made of the ſea-otter's ſkin; and had on his head ſuch a cap as is worn by the people of King George's Sound, ornamented with ſkyblue glaſs beads, about the ſize of a large pea. He ſeemed to ſet a much higher value upon theſe than upon our white glaſs beads. Any ſort of beads, however, appeared to be in high eſtimation with theſe people; and they readily gave whatever

they had in exchange for them; even their fine ſea-otter ſkins.

Theſe people were alſo deſirous of iron; but they wanted pieces eight or ten inches long at leaſt, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. The points of ſome of their ſpears or lances were of that metal; others were of copper, and a few of bone, of which the points of their darts, arrows, &c. were compoſed. I could not prevail upon the chief to truſt himſelf below the upper deck; nor did he and his companions remain long on board. But while we had their company, it was neceſſary to watch them narrowly, as they ſoon betrayed a thieviſh diſpoſition. At length, after being about three or four hours along-ſide the Reſolution, they all left her, and went to the Diſcovery; where, after looking down the hatchways, and ſeeing nobody but the officer of the watch and one or two more, he no doubt thought they might plunder her with eaſe; eſpecially as ſhe lay at ſome diſtance from us. It was unqueſtionably with this view that they all repaired to her. Several of them, without any ceremony, went on board; drew their knives; made ſigns to the officer and people on deck to keep off, and began to look about them for plunder. The firſt thing they met with was the rudder of one of the boats, which they threw over-board to thoſe of their party who had remained in their canoes. Before they had time to find another object that pleaſed their fancy, the crew were alarmed, and began to come on deck armed with cutlaſſes. On ſeeing this the whole company of plunderers ſneaked off in their canoes, with as much deliberation and indifference as if they had done nothing amiſs; and they were obſerved deſcribing

to

to thoſe who had not been on board, how much longer the knives of the ſhip's crew were than their own.

Juſt as we were going to weigh the anchor, to proceed farther up the bay, it began to blow and to rain as hard as before; ſo that we were obliged to veer away the cable again, and lay faſt. Toward the evening, finding that the gale did not moderate, and that it might be ſome time before an opportunity offered to get higher up, I came to a reſolution to heel the ſhip where we were. In heaving the anchor out of the boat, one of the ſeamen, either through ignorance or careleſſneſs, or both, was carried overboard by the buoy-rope, and followed the anchor to the bottom. It is remarkable, that in this very critical ſituation, he had preſence of mind to diſengage himſelf, and come up to the ſurface of the water, where he was taken up, with one of his legs fractured in a dangerous manner.

The leak being ſtopped, which was found to be in the ſeams, at four o'clock in the morning of the 17th, we weighed and ſteered to the north-weſtward, with a light breeze at eaſt north-eaſt; thinking, if there ſhould be any paſſage to the north through this inlet, that it muſt be in that direction. We were now upward of five hundred and twenty leagues to the weſtward of any part of Hudſon's Bay.

Next morning, at three o'clock we weighed, and, with a gentle breeze at north, proceeded to the ſouthward down the inlet, and met with the ſame broken ground as on the preceding day. However, we ſoon extricated ourſelves from it. Next evening we were again in the open ſea, and

found

found the coaſt trending weſt by ſouth, as far as the eye could reach.

To the inlet, which we had now left, I gave the name of Prince William's Sound.

The natives, who came to make us ſeveral viſits, while we were in the ſound, were generally not above the common height; though many of them were under it. They were ſquare, or ſtrong cheſted; and the moſt diſproportioned part of their body ſeemed to be their heads, which were very large; with thick ſhort necks, and large, broad, or ſpreading faces, which, upon the whole, were flat. Their eyes, though not ſmall, ſcarcely bore a proportion to the ſize of their faces; and their noſes had full round points, hooked, or turned up at the tip. Their hair was black, thick, ſtraight, and ſtrong; and their beards, in general, thin, or wanting. Very few of them have any pretenſions to beauty, though their countenance commonly indicates a conſiderable ſhare of vivacity, good-nature and frankneſs.

Their common dreſs (for men, women, and children are clothed alike) is a kind of cloſe frock, or rather robe, reaching generally to the ankles, though ſometimes only to the knees. At the upper part is a hole juſt ſufficient to admit the head, with ſleeves that reach to the wriſt. Theſe frocks are made of the ſkins of different animals; the moſt common of which are thoſe of the ſea-otter, grey fox, racoon, and pine-martin; with many of ſeal ſkins; and in general they are worn with the hairy ſide outward. Some alſo have theſe frocks made of the ſkins of fowls, with only the down remaining on them, which they glue on other

ſubſtances. A few have a kind of cape or collar; and ſome a hood; but the other is the moſt common form, and ſeems to be their whole dreſs in good weather. When it rains, they put over this another frock, ingeniouſly made from the inteſtines of whales, or ſome other large animal, prepared ſo ſkilfully as almoſt to reſemble our gold-beaters leaf.

In general they do not cover their legs or feet; but a few have a kind of ſkin ſtockings, which reach half way up the thigh; and ſcarcely any of them are without mittens for the hands, made of the ſkins of bears paws.

Both ſexes have the ears perforated with ſeveral holes, about the outer and lower part of the edge, in which they hang little bunches of beads. The ſeptum of the noſe is alſo perforated, through which they frequently thruſt the quill feathers of ſmall birds, or little bending ornaments, made of ſhelly ſubſtances, ſtrung on a ſtiff ſtring or cord, three or four inches long, which give them a truly groteſque appearance. But the moſt uncommon and unſightly ornamental faſhion, adopted by ſome of both ſexes, is the having their under lip ſlit, or cut quite through in the direction of the mouth, a little below the ſwelling part. This inciſion, which is made even in the ſucking children, is often above two inches long; and either by its natural retraction, when the wound is freſh, or by the repetition of ſome artificial management, aſſumes the true ſhape of lips, and becomes ſo large as to admit the tongue through. This happened to be the caſe when the firſt perſon, having this inciſion, was ſeen by one of the ſeamen, who called out that the man had two mouths; and,

indeed,

indeed, it does not look unlike it. In this artificial mouth they ſtick a flat narrow ornament, made chiefly out of a ſolid ſhell or bone, cut into little narrow pieces, like ſmall teeth.

The men frequently paint their faces of a bright red, and of a black colour, and ſometimes of a blue or leaden colour; but not in any regular figure; and the women, in ſome meaſure, endeavour to imitate them, by puncturing or ſtaining the chin with black that comes to a point in each cheek; a practice very ſimilar to which is in faſhion among the females of Greenland. Upon the whole, I have no where ſeen ſavages who take more pains than theſe people to ornament, or rather to disfigure, their perſons.

For defenſive armour, they have a kind of jacket, or coat of mail, made of thin laths, bound together with ſinews, which make it quite flexible, though ſo cloſe as not to admit an arrow or dart. It only covers the trunk of the body, and may not be improperly compared to a woman's ſtays.

Beſides the animals which were ſeen at Nootka, there are ſome others in this place which we did not find there; ſuch as the white bear; of whoſe ſkins the natives brought ſeveral pieces, and ſome entire ſkins of cubs; from which their ſize could not be determined. We alſo found the wolverene, or quickhatch, which had very bright colours; a larger ſort of ermine than the common one, which is the ſame as at Nootka, varied with a brown colour, and with ſcarcely any black on its tail. The natives alſo brought the ſkin of the head of ſome very large animal; but it could not be poſitively determined what it was; though, from the colour and ſhagginеſs of the hair, and

its

its unlikeneſs to any land animal, we judged it might probably be that of the large male urſine ſeal, or ſea-bear. The number of ſkins we found here, points out the great plenty of theſe ſeveral animals juſt mentioned; but it is remarkable that we neither ſaw the ſkins of the mooſe nor of the common deer.

The beads and iron found amongſt theſe people, left no room to doubt that they muſt have received them from ſome civilized nation. We were pretty certain, from circumſtances already mentioned, that we were the firſt Europeans with whom they had ever communicated directly; and it remains only to be decided from what quarter they had got our manufactures by intermediate conveyance. And there cannot be the leaſt doubt of their having received theſe articles, through the intervention of the more inland tribes, from Hudſon's Bay, or the ſettlements on the Canadian Lakes.

May the 21ſt, I ſteered to the ſouth-weſt, and paſſed a lofty promontory. As the diſcovery of it was connected with the Princeſs Elizabeth's birth-day, I named it Cape Elizabeth. Beyond it we could ſee no land, ſo that at firſt we were in hopes that it was the weſtern extremity of the continent; but not long after we found our miſtake; for freſh land appeared in ſight, bearing weſt ſouth-weſt. We continued our courſe with little variation, obſerving many high mountains, near the coaſt till the 30th, when we anchored in nineteen fathoms water under the eaſtern ſhore.

About noon two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ſhip, from near a place where we had ſeen ſome ſmoke the preceding day. They laboured very hard in paddling acroſs the ſtrong tide; and heſitated a little before they would come

come quite close; but, upon signs being made to them, they approached. One of them talked a great deal to no purpose; for we did not understand a word he said. He kept pointing to the shore, which we interpreted to be an invitation to go thither. They accepted of a few trifles from me, which I conveyed to them from the quarter gallery.

When the flood made, we weighed, and stood over to the western shore with a fresh gale at north north-east. This, with the other on the opposite shore, contracted the channel to the breadth of four leagues. Through this channel ran a prodigious tide.

As we proceeded farther up, the marks of a river displayed themselves. The water was found to be fresher; insomuch that I was convinced that we were in a large river, and not in a straight communicating with the Northern Seas. But I was desirous of having stronger proofs; and therefore weighed with the next flood, in the morning of the 31st, and plied higher up, or rather drove up with the tide; for we had but little wind.

About eight o'clock we were visited by several of the natives, in one large, and several small canoes. The latter carried only one person each; and some had a paddle with a blade at each end, after the manner of the Esquimaux.

Soon after, we came to an anchor, about two leagues from the west shore. The weather was misty, with drizzling rain, and clear by turns. At the clear intervals, we saw an opening between the mountains on the eastern shore, bearing east from the station of the ships, with low land, which we supposed to be islands lying between us and the main land. From these appearances, we were in some doubt whether the inlet did not

take

take an eaſterly direction, through the above opening; or whether that opening was only a branch of it, and the main channel continued its northern direction through the low land now in ſight.

To determine this point, and to examine the ſhoals, I diſpatched two boats, under the command of the maſter; and as ſoon as the flood-tide made, followed with the ſhips. We had now many evident proofs of being in a great river.

Early next morning, being the 1ſt of June, the maſter returned and reported that he found the inlet, or rather river, contracted to the breadth of one league, by low land on each ſide, through which it took a northerly direction. He proceeded three leagues through this narrow part, which he found navigable for the largeſt ſhips. While the ebb or ſtream ran down, the water was perfectly freſh; but, after the flood made, it became brackiſh; and towards high-water, very much ſo, even as high up as we went.

All hopes of finding a paſſage were now given up. However, I diſpatched two boats, under the command of Lieutenant King, to examine the tides, and to make ſuch other obſervations as might give us ſome inſight into the nature of the river, which I ſhall diſtinguiſh by the name of River Turnagain. By means of this river, and its ſeveral branches, a very extenſive inland communication ſeems to lie open. We had traced it ſeventy leagues, or more, from its entrance, without ſeeing the leaſt appearance of its ſource.

If the diſcovery of this great river*, which

* Captain Cook having here left a blank, which he had not filled up with any particular name, Lord Sandwich directed, with the greateſt propriety, that it ſhould be called Cook's River.

promiſes to vie with the moſt conſiderable ones already known to be capable of extenſive inland navigation, ſhould prove of uſe either to the preſent, or to any future age, the time we ſpent in it ought to be leſs regretted. But to us, who had a much greater object in view, the delay thus occaſioned was an eſſential loſs. The ſeaſon was advancing apace. We knew not how far we might have to proceed to the ſouth; and we were now conviced that the continent of North America extended farther to the weſt, than, from the modern moſt reputable charts, we had reaſon to expect. This made the exiſtence of a paſſage into Hudſon's Bay leſs probable; or at leaſt ſhewed it to be of greater extent. It was a ſatisfaction to me, however, to reflect, that, if I had not examined this very conſiderable inlet, it would have been aſſumed, by ſpeculative fabricators of geography, as a fact, that it communicated with the ſea to the north, or with Hudſon's Bay to the eaſt.

In the afternoon I ſent Mr. King again, with two armed boats, with orders to land on the northern point of the low land, on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the river, there to diſplay the flag; to take poſſeſſion of the country and river in his majeſty's name; and to bury in the ground a bottle, containing ſome pieces of Engliſh coin, of the year 1772, and a paper, on which was inſcribed the names of our ſhips, and the date of our diſcovery.

We weighed anchor as ſoon as it was high-water; and with a faint breeze, ſoutherly, ſtood over to the weſt ſhore, where the return of the flood obliged us to anchor early next morning. Soon after ſeveral large and ſome ſmall canoes, with natives, came off, who bartered their ſkins; after which they ſold their garments, till many of them were quite naked.

In

In plying down the river, a good many of the natives came off. Their company was very acceptable; for they brought with them a large quantity of very fine ſalmon, which they exchanged for ſuch trifles as we had to give them. Moſt of it was ſplit ready for drying; and ſeveral hundred weight of it was procured for the two ſhips.

In the afternoon of the 2d of June, the mountains, for the firſt time ſince our entering the river, were clear of clouds; and we diſcovered a volcano in one of thoſe on the weſt ſide. It did not make any ſtriking appearance, emitting only a white ſmoke, but no fire.

The wind remaining ſoutherly, we continued to tide it down the river. Before we left this place, ſix canoes came off from the eaſt ſhore; ſome conducted by one, and others by two, men. They remained at a little diſtance from the ſhips, viewing them with a kind of ſilent ſurpriſe, at leaſt half an hour, without exchanging a ſingle word with us, or with one another. At length they took courage, and came along-ſide, began to barter with our people, and did not leave us till they had parted with every thing they brought with them, conſiſting of a few ſkins and ſome ſalmon.

Moſt of the ſkins, which we purchaſed here, were made up into garments. However, ſome of theſe were in good condition; but others were old and ragged enough. But as theſe poor people make no other uſe of ſkins but for clothing themſelves, it cannot be ſuppoſed that they are at the trouble of dreſſing more of them than are neceſſary for this purpoſe. And perhaps this is the chief uſe for which they kill the animals; for

the ſea and the rivers ſeem to ſupply them with their principal articles of food. It would probably be much otherwiſe, were they once habituated to a conſtant trade with foreigners.

Nothing intereſting happened till the 18th, when, having occaſion to ſend a boat on board the Diſcovery, one of the people in her ſhot a very beautiful bird of the hawk kind. It is ſomewhat leſs than a duck, and of a black colour, except the fore part of the head, which is white; and from above and behind each eye ariſes an elegant yellowiſh white creſt, revolved backward as a ram's horn. The bill and feet are red. We had for ſome days ſeen theſe birds in large flocks.

On the 19th, being near the ſhore, the Diſcovery fired three guns, brought to, and made the ſignal to ſpeak with us. A boat was immediately ſent to her, and in a ſhort time returned with Captain Clerke. I now learned from him that ſome natives, in three or four canoes, who had followed the ſhip for ſome time, at length got under his ſtern. One of them then made many ſigns, taking off his cap and bowing, after the manner of Europeans. A rope being handed down from the ſhip, to this he faſtened a ſmall thin wooden caſe or box; and having delivered this ſafe, and ſpoken ſomething, and made ſome more ſigns, the canoes dropped aſtern, and left the Diſcovery. No one on board her had any ſuſpicion that the box contained any thing, till after the departure of the canoes, when it was accidentally opened, and a piece of paper was found folded up carefully, upon which ſomething was written in the Ruſſian language, as was ſuppoſed. The date 1778 was prefixed to it; and, in the body of the written note, there was a reference

ference to the year 1766. Not learned enough to decypher the alphabet of the writer, his numerals marked ſufficiently that others had preceded us in viſiting this dreary part of the globe, who were united to us by other ties beſides thoſe of our common nature; and the hopes of ſoon meeting with ſome of the Ruſſian traders, could not but give a ſenſible ſatisfaction to thoſe who had, for ſuch a length of time, been converſant with the ſavages of the Pacific Ocean, and of the continent of North America.

Captain Clerke was at firſt of opinion, that ſome Ruſſians had been ſhipwrecked here; and that theſe unfortunate perſons, ſeeing our ſhips paſs, had taken this method to inform us of their ſituation. Impreſſed with humane ſentiments, on ſuch an occaſion, he was deſirous of ſtopping till they might have time to join us. But no ſuch idea occurred to me. I rather thought that the paper contained a note of information, left by ſome Ruſſian trader, who had lately been amongſt theſe iſlands, to be delivered to the next viſiters. Fully convinced of this, I did not ſtay to enquire any farther into the matter, but made ſail, and ſtood away to the weſtward.

We continued to run all night, with a gentle breeze at north-eaſt; and, at two o'clock next morning, ſome breakers were ſeen within us, at the diſtance of two miles.

The breakers forced us ſo far from the continent, that we had but a diſtant view of the coaſt. Over ſome adjoining iſlands, we could ſee the main land covered with ſnow; but particularly ſome hills, whoſe elevated tops were ſeen towering above the clouds, to a moſt ſtupendous height. The moſt ſouth-weſterly of theſe hills

was diſcovered to have a volcano, which continually threw up vaſt columns of black ſmoke. It ſtands not far from the coaſt. It is alſo remarkable from its figure, which is a complete cone; and the volcano is at the very ſummit.

In the afternoon, having three honrs calm, our people caught upward of a hundred halibuts, ſome of which weighed a hundred pounds. This was a very ſeaſonable refreſhment to us. In the height of our fiſhing, a ſmall canoe, conducted by one man, came to us from the large iſland. On approaching the ſhip, he took off his cap and bowed. It was evident that the Ruſſians muſt have a communication and traffic with theſe people; not only from their acquired politeneſs, but from the note before mentioned. But we had now a freſh proof of it; for our preſent viſiter wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth or ſtuff, under the gut-ſhirt of his own country. He had nothing to barter except a grey fox-ſkin, and ſome fiſhing implements or harpoons; the heads of the ſhafts of which were neatly made of bone.

The weather was cloudy and hazy, with now and then ſunſhine, till the afternoon of the 22d, when the wind came round to the ſouth-eaſt, and, as uſual, brought thick, rainy weather. Before the fog came on, no part of the main land was in ſight, except the volcano, and another mountain cloſe by it. We made but little progreſs for ſome days, having the wind variable, and but little of it.

On the morning of the 25th, we got a breeze eaſterly; and, what was uncommon with this wind, clear weather; ſo that we not only ſaw the volcano, but other mountains, both to the

eaſt

eaſt and weſt of it, and all the coaſt of the main land under them, much plainer than at any time before.

The weather, in the afternoon, became gloomy, and at length turned to a miſt, ſo thick that we could not ſee a hundred yards before us. We were now alarmed at hearing the ſound of breakers on our larboard bow. On heaving the lead, we found twenty eight fathoms water. I immediately brought the ſhip to, and anchored over a bottom of coarſe ſand.

A few hours after, the fog having cleared a little, it appeared that we had eſcaped very imminent danger. We found ourſelves three quarters of a mile from the north-eaſt ſide of an iſland. Two elevated rocks were about half a league each from us, and about the ſame diſtance from each other. There were ſeveral breakers about them; and yet Providence had, in the dark, conducted the ſhips through between theſe rocks, which I ſhould not have ventured in a clear day, and to ſuch an anchoring place that I could not have choſen a better.

On a point, which bore weſt from the ſhip, three quarters of a mile diſtant, were ſeveral natives and their habitations. To this place we ſaw them tow in two whales, which we ſuppoſed they had juſt killed. A few of them now and then came off to the ſhips, and bartered a few trifling things with our people; but never remained above a quarter of an hour at a time. On the contrary, they rather ſeemed ſhy; and yet we could judge that they were no ſtrangers to veſſels ſomething like ours. They behaved with a degree of politeneſs uncommon to ſavage tribes.

At

At day-break on the 28th, we weighed with a light breeze at ſouth, which was ſucceeded by variable light airs from all directions. But as there ran a rapid tide in our favour, we got through before the ebb made. We came to anchor in twenty-eight fathoms water, pretty near the ſouthern ſhore.

While we lay here, ſeveral of the natives came off to us, and bartered a few fiſhing implements for tobacco. One of them, a young man, overſet his canoe, while along-ſide of one of our boats. Our people caught hold of him; but the canoe went adrift. The youth, by this accident, was obliged to come into the ſhip; and he went down into my cabin upon the firſt invitation, without expreſſing the leaſt reluctance or uneaſineſs. His own clothes being wet, I gave him others, in which he dreſſed himſelf with as much eaſe as I could have done. From his behaviour, and that of ſome others, we were convinced that theſe people were no ſtrangers to Europeans, and to ſome of their cuſtoms. But there was ſomething in our ſhips that greatly excited their curioſity; for ſuch as could not come off in canoes, aſſembled on the neighbouring hills to look at them.

Soon after we anchored, a native of the iſland brought on board ſuch another note as had been given to Captain Clerke. He preſented it to me; but it was written in the Ruſſian language, which, as already obſerved, none of us could read. As it could be of no uſe to me, and might be of conſequence to others, I returned it to the bearer, and diſmiſſed him with a few preſents; for which he expreſſed his thanks, by making ſeveral low bows as he retired.

Thick

Thick fogs and a contrary wind detained us till the 2d of July; which afforded an opportunity of acquiring ſome knowledge of the country, and of its inhabitants.

It is called by the natives Samganoodha. Great plenty of good water may be eaſily got, but nothing elſe.

Having now put to ſea, we ſteered to the north, meeting with nothing to obſtruct us in this courſe; but made very little progreſs for many ſucceſſive days, nor met with any thing remarkable.

In the morning of the 16th, we found ourſelves nearer the land than we expected. Here, between two points, the coaſt forms a bay, in ſome parts of which the land was hardly viſible from the maſthead. I ſent Lieutenant Williamſon, with orders to land, and ſee what direction the coaſt took, and what the country produced; for, from the ſhips, it had but a barren appearance.

Soon after, Mr. Williamſon returned, and reported, that he had landed on the point, and having climbed the higheſt hill, found that the fartheſt part of the coaſt in ſight bore nearly north. He took poſſeſſion of the country in his majeſty's name, and left on the hill a bottle, in which was inſcribed, on a piece of paper, the names of the ſhips, and the date of the diſcovery. The promontory, to which he gave the name of Cape Newenham, is a rocky point of tolerable height. The hills are naked; but on the lower grounds grew graſs and other plants. He ſaw no other animal but a doe and her fawn; and a dead ſea-horſe, or cow upon the beach.

From the 16th to the 21ſt, nothing material occurred. On the 21ſt we were obliged to anchor,

chor, to avoid running upon a ſhoal, which had only a depth of five feet. While we lay here, twenty-ſeven men of the country, each in a canoe, came off to the ſhips, which they approached with great caution; hallooing and opening their arms as they advanced. This we underſtood was to expreſs their pacific intentions. At length ſome approached near enough to receive a few trifles that were thrown to them. This encouraged the reſt to venture along-ſide, and a traffic preſently commenced between them and our people. They reſembled the other natives of the coaſt; and appeared to be wholly unacquainted with people like us; they knew not the uſe of tobacco; nor was any foreign article ſeen in their poſſeſſion, unleſs a knife may be looked upon as ſuch. This indeed was only a piece of common iron, fitted in a wooden handle, ſo as to anſwer the purpoſe of a knife.

The canoes were made of ſkins, like all the others we had lately ſeen; only with this difference, that theſe were broader, and the hole, in which the man ſits, was wider than in any I had before met with.

Variable winds, with rain, prevailed till the 3d of Auguſt. Mr. Anderſon, my ſurgeon, who had been lingering under a conſumption for more than twelve months, expired between three and four this afternoon. He was a ſenſible young man, an agreeable companion, well ſkilled in his own profeſſion, and had acquired conſiderable knowledge in other branches of ſcience. The reader of this journal will have obſerved, how uſeful an aſſiſtant I had found him in the courſe of the voyage; and, had it pleaſed God to

have

have ſpared his life, the public, I make no doubt, might have received from him, ſuch communications, on various parts of the natural hiſtory of the ſeveral places we viſited, as would have abundantly ſhewn that he was not unworthy of this commendation. Soon after he had breathed his laſt, land was ſeen to the weſtward, twelve leagues diſtant. It was ſuppoſed to be an iſland, and, to perpetuate the memory of the deceaſed, for whom I had a very great regard, I named it Anderſon's Iſland.

At ten in the morning of the 5th, with the wind at ſouth-weſt, we ran down, and anchored, between an iſland and the continent, in ſeven fathoms water. This iſland, which was named Sledge Iſland, is about four leagues in circuit. I landed here, but ſaw neither ſhrub nor tree, either upon the iſland or on the continent. That people had lately been on the iſland, was evident from the marks of their feet. We found, near where we landed, a ſledge, which occaſioned this name being given to the iſland. It ſeemed to be ſuch an one as the Ruſſians in Kamtſchatka make uſe of over the ice or ſnow. It was ten feet long, twenty inches broad, and had a kind of rail work on each ſide, and was ſhod with bone. The conſtruction of it was admirable, and all the parts neatly put together.

After ſeveral obſervations from the 6th to the 9th, I was ſatisfied that the whole was a continued coaſt; I tacked and ſtood away for its north-weſt part, and came to an anchor near a point of land, which I named Cape Prince of Wales. It is the weſtern extremity of all America hitherto known.

At day-break, in the morning of the 10th, we reſumed our courſe to the weſt; and about ten o'clock we anchored in a large bay, two miles from the ſhore.

As we were ſtanding into this bay, we perceived the north ſhore, a village, and ſome people, whom the ſight of the ſhips ſeemed to have thrown into confuſion or fear. At theſe habitations I propoſed to land, and accordingly went, with three armed boats accompanied with ſome of the officers. About thirty or forty men, each armed with a ſpontoon, a bow and arrows, ſtood drawn up on a riſing ground cloſe by the village. As we drew near, three of them came down toward the ſhore, and were ſo polite as to take off their caps, and to make us low bows. We returned the civility; but this did not inſpire them with ſufficient confidence to wait for our landing; for the moment we put the boats aſhore, they retired. I followed them alone, and by ſigns and geſtures, prevailed on them to ſtop, and receive ſome trifling preſents. In return, they gave me two fox-ſkins and a couple of ſea-horſe teeth.

They ſeemed very cautious, expreſſing their deſire, by ſigns, that no more of our people ſhould be permitted to come up. A few beads diſtributed to thoſe about us, ſoon created a kind of confidence; and, by degrees, a ſort of traffic between us commenced. In exchange for knives, beads, tobacco, and other articles, they gave us ſome of their clothing and a few arrows. But nothing that we had to offer, could induce them to part with a ſpear or a bow. Theſe they held in conſtant readineſs, never once quitting them, except at one time, when four or five perſons laid theirs down while they gave us a ſong and a dance.

The arrows were pointed either with bone or ſtone; but very few of them had barbs; and ſome of them had a round blunt point. What uſe theſe may be applied to, I cannot ſay; unleſs it be to kill ſmall animals, without damaging the ſkin. The bows were ſuch as we had ſeen on the American coaſt, and like thoſe uſed by the Eſquimaux. The ſpears or ſpontoons were of iron or ſteel, and of European or Aſiatic workmanſhip; in which no little pains had been taken, to ornament them with carving and inlayings of braſs and of a white metal.

Several other things, and in particular their clothing, ſhewed that they were poſſeſſed of a degree of ingenuity, far ſurpaſſing what one could expect to find amongſt ſo northern a people. All the Americans we had ſeen, ſince our arrival on that coaſt, were rather low of ſtature, with round chubby faces, and high cheek bones. The people we now were amongſt, far from reſembling them, had long viſages, and were ſtout and well made. In ſhort, they appeared to be a quite different nation. We ſaw neither women nor children of either ſex; nor any aged except one man, who was bald headed; and he was the only one who carried no arms. All of them had their ears bored; and ſome had glaſs beads hanging to them. Theſe were the only fixed ornaments we ſaw about them; for they wear none to the lips.

Their clothing conſiſted of a cap, a frock, a pair of breeches, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of leather, or of the ſkins of deer, dogs, ſeals, &c. extremely well dreſſed; ſome with the hair or fur on; but others without it.

We found the village compoſed both of their ſummer and winter habitations. The latter are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is ſunk a little below the ſurface of the earth. One of them, which I examined, was of an oval form, about twenty feet long, and twelve or more high.

The ſummer huts were pretty large and circular, being brought to a point at the top. The framing was of ſlight poles and bones, covered with the ſkins of ſea animals. I examined the inſide of one. There was a fire-place juſt within the door, where lay a few wooden veſſels, all very dirty. Their bed-places were cloſe to the ſide, and took up about half the circuit. The bed and bedding were of deer-ſkins, and moſt of them were dry and clean.

At firſt we ſuppoſed ſome land, viſible to the weſtward, to be a part of the Iſland of Alaſchka, laid down in Mr. Staehlin's map, but from the figure of the coaſt, the ſituation of the oppoſite ſhore of America, and from the longitude, we ſoon began to think that it was more probably, the eaſtern extremity of Aſia, explored by Behring in 1728.

After a ſtay of between two and three hours with theſe people, we returned to our ſhips; and, ſoon after, we weighed anchor and ſtood out of the bay. From this ſtation we ſteered eaſt, in order to get nearer the American coaſt.

On Monday the 7th, before noon, we perceived a brightneſs in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, commonly called the blink. About an hour after, the ſight of a large field of ice, left us no longer in doubt about the cauſe of the brightneſs of the horizon. At half paſt two we tacked cloſe to the edge of the ice,

in

in twenty-two fathoms water, not being able to ſtand on any farther; for the ice was quite impenetrable, and extended from weſt by ſouth, to eaſt by north, as far as the eye could reach. Here were abundance of ſea-horſes.

On the 18th, at noon, we were near five leagues farther to the eaſtward. We were, at this time, cloſe to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall; and ſeemed to be ten or twelve feet high at leaſt. But farther north it appeared much higher.

We now ſtood to the ſouthward; and after running ſix leagues, ſhoaled the water to ſeven fathoms; but it ſoon deepened to nine fathoms. At this time we ſaw land extending from ſouth to ſouth-eaſt by eaſt, about three or four miles diſtant. The eaſtern extreme forms a point, which was much encumbered with ice; for which reaſon it obtained the name of Icy Cape. The other extreme of the land was loſt in the horizon; ſo that there can be no doubt of its being a continuation of the American continent.

Our ſituation was now more and more critical. We were in ſhoal water, upon a lee ſhore; and the main body of the ice to windward driving down upon us. I therefore made the ſignal for the Diſcovery to tack, and tacked myſelf at the ſame time.

Next day we had a good deal of drift ice about us; and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. It was too cloſe, and in too large pieces to attempt forcing the ſhips through it. On the ice lay a prodigious number of ſea-horſes; and, as we were in want of freſh proviſions, the boats from each ſhip were ſent to get ſome.

Their fat, at firſt, is as ſweet as marrow; but in a few days it grows rancid, unleſs it be ſalted, in which ſtate it will keep much longer. The lean fleſh is coarſe, black, and has rather a ſtrong taſte; and the heart is nearly as well-taſted as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, yields a good deal of oil, which burns very well in lamps; and their hides, which are very thick, were very uſeful about our rigging. The teeth, or tuſks, of moſt of them were, at this time, very ſmall; even ſome of the largeſt and oldeſt of theſe animals had them not exceeding ſix inches in length. From this we concluded that they had lately ſhed their old teeth.

They lie in herds, of many hundreds, upon the ice; huddling one over the other like ſwine, and roar or bray very loud; ſo that in the night, or in foggy weather, they gave us notice of the vicinity of the ice before we could ſee it. We never found the whole herd aſleep; ſome being always upon the watch. Theſe, on the approach of the boat, would wake thoſe next to them; and the alarm being thus gradually communicated, the whole herd would be awake preſently. They did not appear to us to be that dangerous animal ſome authors have deſcribed; not even when attacked. They are rather more ſo to appearance than in reality. Vaſt numbers of them would follow and come cloſe up to the boats. But the flaſh of a muſket in the pan, or even pointing one at them, would ſend them down in an inſtant. The female, however, will defend the young one to the very laſt, and at the expence of her own life, whether in the water or upon the ice. Nor will the young one quit the dam, though ſhe be dead.

Why

Why they ſhould be called ſea-horſes, is hard to ſay; unleſs the word be a corruption of the Ruſſian name Morſe; for they have not the leaſt reſemblance of a horſe. This is, without doubt, the ſame animal that is found in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and there called ſea-cow. It is certainly more like a cow than a horſe; but this likeneſs conſiſts in nothing but the ſnout. In ſhort, it is an animal like a ſeal, but incomparably larger; weighing ſometimes more than one thouſand pounds, and meaſuring ten feet from the ſnout to the tail.

By the time that we had got our ſea-horſes on board, we were in a manner ſurrounded with the ice; and had no way left to clear it but by ſtanding to the ſouthward, which was done till three o'clock next morning. At two in the afternoon, we fell in with the main ice; along the edge of which we kept, being partly directed by the roaring of the ſea-horſes, for we had a very thick fog. Thus we continued ſailing till near midnight, when we got in amongſt the looſe ice, and heard the ſurge of the ſea upon the main ice.

Next morning the fog clearing away, we ſaw the continent of America, extending from ſouth by eaſt, to eaſt by ſouth; and at noon from ſouth-weſt half ſouth to eaſt; the neareſt part five leagues diſtant.

I continued to ſteer in for it until eight o'clock, in order to get a nearer view of it, and to look for a harbour, but ſeeing nothing like one, I ſtood again to the north.

The ice obliged us to change our courſe frequently, till the 27th, when we tacked and ſtood to the weſt, and at ſeven in the evening we were cloſe in with the edge of the ice, which lay eaſt

from north-eaſt, and weſt ſouth-weſt, as far each way as the eye could reach. Having but little wind, I went with the boats to examine the ſtate of the ice. I found it conſiſting of looſe pieces of various extent, and ſo cloſe together, that I could hardly enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impoſſible for the ſhips to enter it, as if it had been ſo many rocks.

A thick fog, which came on while I was thus employed with the boats, haſtened me aboard rather ſooner than I could have wiſhed, with one ſea-horſe to each ſhip. We had killed more, but could not wait to bring them with us. The number of theſe animals, on all the ice that we had ſeen, is almoſt incredible. By this time our people began to reliſh them. We now ſtretched to the ſouth-eaſt.

On the 29th, the weather, which had been hazy, cleared up. This enabled us to have a pretty good view of the Aſiatic coaſt: which, in every reſpect, is like the oppoſite one of America; that is, low land next the ſea, with elevated land farther back. It was perfectly deſtitute of wood, and even ſnow; but was probably covered with a moſſy ſubſtance, that gave it a browniſh caſt. In the low ground, lying between the high land and the ſea, was a lake, extending to the ſouth-eaſt, farther than we could ſee.

The ſeaſon was now ſo far advanced, and the time when the froſt was expected to ſet in, ſo near at hand, that I did not think it conſiſtent with prudence to make any farther attempts to find a paſſage into the Atlantic this year, in any direction; ſo little was the proſpect of ſucceeding. My attention was now directed toward finding out ſome place where we might ſupply

ourſelves

ourſelves with wood and water; and the object uppermoſt in my thoughts was, how I ſhould ſpend the winter, ſo as to make ſome improvements in geography and navigation, and at the ſame time be in a condition to return to the north, in farther ſearch of a paſſage the enſuing ſummer.

After ſtanding off till we got into eighteen fathoms water, I bore up to the eaſtward along the coaſt of Aſia. At day-break on the 30th, we made ſail, and ſteered ſuch a courſe as I thought would bring us in with the land. For the weather was as thick as ever, and it ſnowed inceſſantly. At ten we got ſight of the coaſt, bearing ſouth-weſt, four miles diſtant.

The inland country hereabout is full of hills; ſome of which are of a conſiderable height. The land was covered with ſnow.

September 2d, we had now fair weather and ſunſhine; and, as we ranged along the coaſt, at the diſtance of four miles, we ſaw ſeveral of the inhabitants, and ſome of their habitations, which looked like little hillocks of earth. None of them however attempted to come off to us; which ſeemed a little extraordinary. Theſe people muſt be the Tſchutſki; a nation, that at the time Mr. Muller wrote, the Ruſſians had not been able to conquer.

The more I was convinced of my being now upon the coaſt of Aſia, the more I was at a loſs to reconcile Mr. Staehlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago with my obſervations; and I had no way to account for the great difference, but by ſuppoſing that I had miſtaken ſome part of what he calls the Iſland of Alaſchka for the American continent, and had miſſed the

channel

channel that ſeparates them. Admitting even this, there would ſtill have been a conſiderable difference. It was with me a matter of ſome conſequence to clear up this point the preſent ſeaſon, that I might have but one object in view the next. And as the northern iſles are repreſented by him as abounding with wood, I was in hopes, if I ſhould find them, of getting a ſupply of that article, which we now began to be in great want of on board.

With theſe views, I ſteered over for the American coaſt, and on the 6th we got ſight of it.

Purſuing our courſe, on the 9th we found ourſelves upon a coaſt covered with wood; an agreeable ſight, to which of late we had not been accuſtomed. Next morning, being about a league from the weſt ſhore, I took two boats and landed, attended by Mr. King, to ſeek wood and water. Here we obſerved tracks of deer and foxes on the beech, on which alſo lay a great quantity of drift-wood; and there was no want of freſh water. I returned on board, with an intention to bring the ſhips to an anchor here; but the wind then veering to north-eaſt, I ſtretched over to the oppoſite ſhore, in hopes of finding wood there alſo, and anchored at eight o'clock in the evening; but next morning we found it to be a peninſula, united to the continent by a low neck of land, on each ſide of which the coaſt forms a bay, which obtained the name of Cape Denbigh.

Several people were ſeen upon the peninſula; and one man came off in a ſmall canoe. I gave him a knife and a few beads, with which he ſeemed well pleaſed. Having made ſigns to him to bring us ſomething to eat, he immediately

left

left us, and paddled toward the ſhore. But meeting another man coming off, who happened to have two dried ſalmon, he got them from him; and, on returning to the ſhip, would give them to nobody but me. Some of our people thought that he had aſked for me under the name of Capitane; but, in this, they were probably miſtaken.

Lieutenant Gore, being now ſent to the peninſula, reported that there was but little freſh water; and that wood was difficult to be got at, by reaſon of the boats grounding at ſome diſtance from the beach. This being the caſe, I ſtood back to the other ſhore; and, at eight o'clock the next morning, ſent all the boats and a party of men, with an officer, to get wood from the place where I had landed two days before.

Next day a family of the natives came near to our wooding party. I know not how many there were at firſt, but I ſaw only the huſband, the wife, and their child; and a fourth perſon, who bore the human ſhape, and that was all; for he was the moſt deformed cripple I had ever ſeen or heard of. The other man was almoſt blind; and neither he nor his wife were ſuch good-looking people as we had ſometimes ſeen amongſt the natives of this coaſt. The under lips of both were bored; and they had in their poſſeſſion ſome ſuch glaſs beads as I had met with before amongſt their neighbours. But iron was their beloved article. For four knives, which we had made out of an old iron hoop, I got from them near four hundred pounds weight of fiſh, which they had caught on this or the preceding day. I gave the child, who was a girl, a few beads; on which the mother burſt into tears, then the father, then

the

the cripple, and at laſt, to complete the concert, the girl herſelf. But this muſic continued not long. Before night, we had got the ſhips amply ſupplied with wood, and had carried on board above twelve tuns of water to each.

Some doubts being ſtill entertained, whether the coaſt we were now upon belonged to an iſland, or the American continent, and the ſhallowneſs of the water putting it out of our power to determine this with our ſhips, I ſent Lieutenant King, with two boats under his command, to make ſuch ſearches as might leave no room for a variety of opinions on the ſubject.

This officer returned from his expedition on the 16th, and reported that he proceeded with the boats about three or four leagues farther than the ſhips had been able to go; that he then landed on the weſt ſide; that from the heights he could ſee the two coaſts join, and the inlet terminate in a ſmall river or creek, before which were banks of ſand or mud; and every where ſhoal water.

From the elevated ſpot on which Mr. King ſurveyed the ſound, he could diſtinguiſh many extenſive valleys, with rivers running through them, well wooded, and bounded by hills of a gentle aſcent and moderate height.

In honour of Sir Fletcher Norton, ſpeaker of the Houſe of Commons, and Mr. King's near relation, I named this inlet Norton's Sound.

It was now high time to think of leaving theſe northern regions, and to retire to ſome place during the winter, where I might procure refreſhments for my people, and a ſmall ſupply of proviſions. No place was ſo conveniently within our reach, where we could expect to have our

wants

wants relieved, as the Sandwich Iſlands. To them, therefore, I determined to proceed.

On the 2d of October, at day-break, we ſaw the Iſland of Oonalaſhka, bearing ſouth-eaſt. But as this was to us a new point of view, and the land was obſcured by a thick haze, we were not ſure of our ſituation till noon, when the obſerved latitude determined it. But as all harbours were alike to me, provided they were equally ſafe and convenient, I hauled into a bay that lies ten miles to the weſtward of Samganoodha, known by the name of Egoochſhac; but we found very deep water, ſo that we were glad to get out again. The natives, many of whom lived here, viſited us at different times, bringing with them dried ſalmon, and other fiſh, which they exchanged with the ſeamen for tobacco. But a few days before, every ounce of tobacco that was in the ſhip had been diſtributed among them; and the quantity was not half ſufficient to anſwer their demands. Notwithſtanding this, ſo improvident a creature is an Engliſh ſailor, that they were as profuſe in making their bargains, as if we had arrived at a port in Virginia.

In the afternoon of the 3d, we anchored in Samganoodha Harbour; and the next morning, the carpenters of both ſhips were ſet to work to overhaul and repair the ſhips.

There were great quantities of berries found aſhore. In order to avail ourſelves as much as poſſible of this uſeful refreſhment, one-third of the people, by turns, had leave to go and pick them. Conſiderable quantities of them were alſo procured from the natives. If there were any ſeeds of the ſcurvy in either ſhip, theſe berries, and the uſe of ſpruce beer, which they had

to drink every other day, effectually eradicated them.

We alſo got plenty of fiſh; at firſt moſtly ſalmon, both freſh and dried, which the natives brought us. Some of the freſh ſalmon was in high perfection; we caught a good many ſalmon trout, and once a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. The fiſhery failing, we had recourſe to hooks and lines. A boat was ſent out every morning, and ſeldom returned without eight or ten halibut; which were more than ſufficient to ſerve all our people.

On the 8th, I received by the hands of an Oonalaſhka man, named Derramouſhka, a very ſingular preſent, conſidering the place. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye made in the form of a loaf, for it incloſed ſome ſalmon, highly ſeaſoned with pepper. This man had the like preſent for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of us, written in a character which none of us could read. It was natural to ſuppoſe that this preſent was from ſome Ruſſians now in our neighbourhood, and therefore we ſent by the ſame hand, to theſe our unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter. I alſo ſent along with Derramouſhka, Corporal Lediard, of the marines, an intelligent man, in order to gain ſome farther information, with orders that, if he met with any Ruſſians, he ſhould endeavour to make them underſtand that we were Engliſh, the friends and allies of their nation.

On the 10th, Lediard returned with three Ruſſian ſeamen, or furriers; who with ſome others reſided at Egoochſhac, where they had a dwelling-houſe, ſome ſtore-houſes, and a ſloop of about thirty tons burthen. They were all three well-

behaved

behaved intelligent men, and very ready to give me all the information I could desire. But for want of an interpreter, we had some difficulty to understand each other.

On the 14th, in the evening, while Mr. Webber and I were at a village, at a small distance from Samganoodha, a Russian landed there, who I found was the principal person amongst his countrymen in this and the neighbouring islands. His name was Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff. He arrived in a canoe carrying three persons, attended by twenty or thirty other canoes, each conducted by one man. I took notice that the first thing they did, after landing, was to make a small tent for Ismyloff, of materials which they brought with them; and then they made others for themselves, of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with grass; so that the people of the village were at no trouble to find them lodging. Ismyloff, having invited us into his tent, set before us some dried salmon and berries; which, I was satisfied, was the best cheer he had. He appeared to be a sensible intelligent man; and I felt no small mortification in not being able to converse with him, unless by signs, assisted by figures, and other characters; which however were a very great help. I desired to see him on board the next day; and accordingly he came with all his attendants.

I found that he was very well acquainted with the geography of these parts, and with all the discoveries that had been made in them by the Russians. On seeing the modern maps, he at once pointed out their errors.

From what we could gather from Ismyloff and his countrymen, the Russians have made several attempts to get a footing upon that part of the

continent that lies contiguous to Oonalaſhka and the adjoining iſlands, but have always been repulſed by the natives, whom they deſcribe as a very treacherous people. They mentioned two or three captains or chief men, who had been murdered by them; and ſome of the Ruſſians ſhewed us wounds which they ſaid they had received there.

He would fain have made me a preſent of a ſea-otter ſkin, which, he ſaid, was worth eighty roubles at Kamtſchatka. However, I thought proper to decline it; but I accepted of ſome dried fiſh, and ſeveral baſkets of the lily, or ſaranno root, which is deſcribed at large in the Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka. Next day Mr. Iſmyloff left us with all his retinue, promiſing to return in a few days. Accordingly, on the 19th, he made us another viſit, and remained with us till the 21ſt, in the evening, when he took his final leave. To his care I intruſted a letter to the Lords Commiſſioners of the Admiralty; in which was incloſed a chart of all the northern coaſts I had viſited. Mr. Iſmyloff ſeemed to have abilities that might entitle him to a higher ſtation in life than that in which we found him.

In the morning of the 22d, we made an attempt to get to ſea, with the wind at ſouth-eaſt, which miſcarried. The following afternoon, we were viſited by one Jacob Ivanovitch Sopoſnicoff, a Ruſſian, who commanded a ſmall veſſel at Oomanak. This man had a great ſhare of modeſty and intelligence.

After we became acquainted with theſe Ruſſians, ſome of our gentlemen, at different times, viſited their ſettlement on the iſland, where they always met with a hearty welcome. This ſettle-

ment

ment conſiſted of a dwelling-houſe and two ſtore-houſes. And, beſides the Ruſſians, there was a number of the Kamtſchadales, and of the natives, as ſervants or ſlaves to the former. Some others of the natives, who ſeemed independent of the Ruſſians, lived at the ſame place. They all dwell in the ſame houſe; the Ruſſians at the upper end, the Kamtſchadales in the middle, and the natives at the lower end, where is fixed a large boiler for preparing their food, which conſiſts chiefly of what the ſea produces, with the addition of wild roots and berries.

As the iſland ſupplies them with food, ſo it does, in a great meaſure, with clothing. This conſiſts chiefly of ſkins, and is perhaps the beſt they could have. The upper garment is made like our waggoner's frock, and reaches as low as the knee. Beſides this, they wear a waiſtcoat or two, a pair of breeches, a fur cap, and a pair of boots, the ſoles and upper leathers of which are of Ruſſian leather; but the legs are made of ſome kind of ſtrong gut.

There are Ruſſians ſettled upon all the principal iſlands between Oonalaſhka and Kamtſchatka, for the ſole purpoſe of collecting furs. Their great object is the ſea beaver or otter. I never heard them enquire after any other animal; though thoſe, whoſe ſkins are of inferior value, are alſo made part of their cargo.

It is now time to give ſome account of the native inhabitants. To all appearance, they are the moſt peaceable inoffenſive people I ever met with. And as to honeſty, they might ſerve as a pattern to the moſt civilized nation upon earth. But, from what I ſaw of their neighbours, with whom the Ruſſians have no connection, I doubt

whether this was their original diſpoſition; and rather think that it has been the conſequence of their preſent ſtate of ſubjection.

Theſe people are rather low of ſtature, but plump and well ſhaped; with rather ſhort necks; ſwarthy chubby faces; black eyes; ſmall beards; and long, ſtraight, black hair; which the men wear looſe behind, and cut before, but the women tie up in a bunch.

Both ſexes wear the ſame, in faſhion; the only difference is in the materials. The women's frock is made of ſeal-ſkin; and that of the men of the ſkins of birds; both reaching below the knee. This is the whole dreſs of the women. But over the frock the men wear another made of gut, which reſiſts water; and has a hood to it, which draws over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them have a kind of oval ſnouted cap, made of wood, with a rim to admit the head.

They make uſe of no paint; but the women puncture their faces ſlightly; and both men and women bore the under lip, to which they fix pieces of bone.

Their food conſiſts of fiſh, ſea animals, birds, roots, and berries; and even of ſea weed. They eat almoſt every thing raw. Boiling and broiling were the only methods of cookery that I ſaw them make uſe of; and the firſt was probably learnt from the Ruſſians.

I was once preſent when the Chief of Oonalaſhka made his dinner on the raw head of a large halibut, juſt caught, which he ſwallowed with as much ſatisfaction as we ſhould do raw oyſters. When he had done, the remains of the head were cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, who

tore

tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones like ſo many dogs.

Their method of building is as follows: they dig in the ground, an oblong ſquare pit, the length of which ſeldom exceeds fifty feet, and the breadth twenty; but in general the dimenſions are ſmaller. Over this excavation they form the roof, of wood which the ſea throws aſhore. This roof is covered firſt with graſs, and then with earth; ſo that the outward appearance is like a dunghill. In the middle of the roof, toward each end, is left a ſquare opening, by which the light is admitted: one of theſe openings being for this purpoſe only, and the other being alſo uſed to go in and out by, with the help of a ladder. Round the ſides and ends of the huts, the families (for ſeveral are lodged together) have their ſeparate apartments, where they ſleep and ſit at work; not upon benches, but in a kind of concave trench, which is dug all round the inſide of the houſe, and covered with mats; ſo that this part is kept tolerably decent. But the middle of the houſe, which is common to all the families, is far otherwiſe; for, although it be covered with dry graſs, it is a receptacle for dirt of every kind.

Their houſehold furnitnre conſiſts of bowls, ſpoons, buckets, piggins or cans, matted baſkets, and perhaps a Ruſſian kettle or pot. All theſe utenſils are very neatly made, and well formed; and yet we ſaw no other tools among them but the knife and the hatchet. There are few, if any of them, that do not ſmoke, chew tobacco, and take ſnuff; a luxury that bids fair to keep them always poor.

I ſaw not a fire-place in any one of their houſes. They are lighted, as well as heated by lamps; which are ſimple, and yet anſwer the purpoſe very well. They are made of a flat ſtone, hollowed on one ſide like a plate, and about the ſame ſize, or rather larger. In the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with a little dry graſs, which ſerves the purpoſe of a wick.

They produce fire both by colliſion and by attrition; the former by ſtriking two ſtones one againſt another, on one of which a good deal of brimſtone is firſt rubbed. The latter method is with two pieces of wood; one of which is a ſtick of about eighteen inches in length, and the other a flat piece. The pointed end of the ſtick they preſſed upon the other, whirling it nimbly round as a drill; thus producing fire in a few minutes.

Their canoes are built nearly after the manner of thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux; the framing being of ſlender laths, and the covering of ſeal-ſkins. They are about twelve feet long; a foot and a half broad in the middle; and twelve or fourteen inches deep. Upon occaſion, they can carry two perſons; one of whom is ſtretched at full length in the canoe; and the other ſits in the ſeat, or round hole, which is nearly in the middle.

Their fiſhing and hunting implements are all made in great perfection, of wood and bone; and differ very little from thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders, as they are deſcribed by Crantz. Theſe people are very expert in ſtriking fiſh, both in the ſea and in rivers. They alſo make uſe of hooks and lines, nets and wears. The hooks are compoſed of bone, and the lines of ſinews.

The fiſhes which are common to other northern ſeas, are found here; ſuch as whales, grampuſſes, porpoiſes, ſword-fiſh, halibut, cod, ſalmon, trout, ſoals, flat-fiſh; ſeveral other ſorts of ſmall fiſh; and there may be many more that we had no opportunity of ſeeing. Sea-horſes are, indeed, in prodigious numbers about the ice; and the ſea-otter is, I believe, no where found but in this ſea. We ſometimes ſaw an animal, with a head like a ſeal's, that blew after the manner of whales. It was larger than a ſeal, and its colour was white, with ſome dark ſpots. Probably this was the ſea-cow, or manati.

I think I may venture to aſſert, that ſea and water fowls are neither in ſuch numbers, nor in ſuch variety, as with us in the northern parts of the Atlantic Ocean.

The few land birds that we met with are the ſame with thoſe in Europe; but there may be many others which we had no opportunity of knowing. A very beautiful bird was ſhot in the woods at Norton Sound; which, I am told, is ſometimes found in England, and known by the name of chatterer.

As our excurſions and obſervations were confined wholly to the ſea-coaſt, it is not to be expected that we could know much of the animals or vegetables of the country. There are no deer upon Oonalaſhka, or upon any other of the iſlands. Nor have they any domeſtic animals; not even dogs. Foxes and weaſels were the only quadrupeds we ſaw.

There is a great variety of plants at Oonalaſhka; and moſt of them were in flower the latter end of June. The principal one is the ſaranne, or lily root, which is about the ſize of a root of garlick;

garlick; the taſte is not diſagreeable, and we found means to make ſome good diſhes with it.

We muſt reckon, amongſt the food of the natives, ſome other wild roots; the ſtalk of a plant reſembling angelica; and berries of ſeveral different ſorts; ſuch as bramble-berries; cran-berries; hurtle-berries; heath-berries; a ſmall red berry, which, in Newfoundland, is called partridge-berry; and another brown berry unknown to us. This has ſomewhat of the taſte of a ſloe, but is unlike it in every other reſpect. It is very aſtringent, if eaten in any quantity. Brandy might be diſtilled from it.

On the low ground, and in the valleys, is plenty of graſs, which grows very thick, and to a great length. I am of opinion that cattle might ſubſiſt at Oonalaſhka all the year round, without being houſed.

What their notions are of the Deity, and of a future ſtate, I know not. I am equally unacquainted with their diverſions; nothing having been ſeen that could give us an inſight into either.

They are remarkably cheerful and friendly. They do not ſeem to be long-lived. I no where ſaw a perſon, man or woman, whom I could ſuppoſe to be ſixty years of age; and but very few who appeared to be above fifty.

I have frequently remarked how nearly the natives, on this north-weſt ſide of America, reſemble the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux, in various particulars of perſon, dreſs, weapons, canoes, and the like. However, I was much leſs ſtruck with this, than with the affinity which we found ſubſiſting between the dialects of the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux, and thoſe of Norton's Sound and Oonalaſhka. From which there is great reaſon to

believe

believe that all theſe nations are of the ſame extraction; and if ſo, there can be little doubt of there being a northern communication of ſome ſort, by ſea, between this weſt ſide of America and the eaſt ſide, through Baffin's Bay; which communication, however, may be effectually ſhut up againſt ſhips, by ice, and other impediments. Such at leaſt was my opinion at this time.

In the morning of Monday, the 26th of October, we put to ſea from Samganoodha Harbour. My intention was now to proceed to the Sandwich Iſlands, there to ſpend a few of the winter months, in caſe we ſhould meet with the neceſſary refreſhments, and then to direct our courſe to Kamtſchatka, ſo as to endeavour to be there by the middle of May the enſuing ſummer. In conſequence of this reſolution, I gave Captain Clerke orders how to proceed, in caſe of ſeparation; appointing the Sandwich Iſlands for the firſt place of rendezvous, and the harbour of Petropaulowſka, in Kamtſchatka, for the ſecond.

Nothing remarkable happened during our courſe. At day-break, on the 26th of November, land was ſeen extending from ſouth ſouth-eaſt to weſt. We were now ſatisfied that the group of the Sandwich Iſlands had been only imperfectly diſcovered; as thoſe which we had viſited in our progreſs northward, all lie to the leeward of our preſent ſtation.

I bore up, and ranged along the coaſt to the weſtward. It was not long before we ſaw people on ſeveral parts of the ſhore, and ſome houſes and plantations. The country ſeemed to be both well wooded and watered.

At noon, ſeeing ſome canoes coming off to us, I brought to. We got from our viſiters a quantity

tity of cuttle-fiſh, for nails and pieces of iron. They brought very little fruit and roots; but told us that they had plenty of them on their iſland, as alſo hogs and fowls. Having no doubt that the people would return to the ſhips next day, with the produce of their country, I kept plying off all night, and in the morning ſtood cloſe in ſhore. At firſt, only a few of the natives viſited us; but toward noon we had the company of a good many, who brought with them bread-fruit, potatoes, taro, or eddy roots, a few plantains, and ſmall pigs; all of which they exchanged for nails and iron tools.

In the afternoon of the 30th, being off the north-eaſt end of the iſland, ſeveral canoes came off to the ſhips. Moſt of theſe belonged to a chief, named Terreeoboo, who came in one of them. He made me a preſent of two or three ſmall pigs; and we got by barter, from the other people, a little fruit. After a ſtay of about two hours, they all left us, except ſix or eight of their company, who choſe to remain on board. A double ſailing canoe came ſoon after to attend upon them; which we towed aſtern all night. In the evening, we diſcovered another iſland to windward, which the natives call Owhyhee.

On the 1ſt of December, at eight in the morning, finding that we could fetch Owhyhee, I ſtood for it; and our viſiters from another iſland, called Mowee, not chuſing to accompany us, embarked in their canoe, and went aſhore.

Next morning we were ſurpriſed to ſee the ſummits of the mountains on Owhyhee covered with ſnow. As we drew near the ſhore, ſome of the natives came off to us. They were a little ſhy at firſt; but we ſoon enticed ſome of them

on

on board; and at laſt prevailed upon them to return to the iſland, and bring off what we wanted.

Having procured a quantity of ſugar cane, and finding a ſtrong decoction of it produced a very palatable beer, I ordered ſome more to be brewed for our general uſe. But when the caſk was now broached, not one of my crew would even ſo much as taſte it. I myſelf and the officers continued to make uſe of it, whenever we could get materials for brewing it. A few hops, of which we had ſome on board, improved it much. It has the taſte of new malt beer; and I believe no one will doubt of its being very wholeſome. Yet my inconſiderate crew alleged that it was injurious to their health.

Every innovation whatever on board a ſhip, though ever ſo much to the advantage of ſeamen, is ſure to meet with their higheſt diſapprobation. Both portable ſoup and ſour krout were at firſt condemned as ſtuff unfit for human beings. Few commanders have introduced into their ſhips more novelties, as uſeful varieties of food and drink, than I have done. It has, however, been in a great meaſure, owing to various little deviations from eſtabliſhed practice, that I have been able to preſerve my people, generally ſpeaking, from that dreadful diſtemper, the ſcurvy, which has perhaps deſtroyed more of our ſailors in their peaceful voyages, than have fallen by the enemy in military expeditions.

I kept at ſome diſtance from the coaſt till the 13th, when I ſtood in again; and, after having had ſome trade with the natives, who viſited us, returned to ſea.

At day-break, a dreadful ſurf breaking upon the ſhore, which was not more than half a league

diſtant

diſtant, it was evident that we had been in the moſt imminent danger. Nor were we yet in ſafety, the wind veering more eaſterly; ſo that for ſome time, we did but juſt keep our diſtance from the coaſt.

In the afternoon of the 20th, ſome of the natives came off in their canoes, bringing with them a few pigs and plantains. We continued trading with the people till four in the afternoon; when, having got a pretty good ſupply, we made ſail, and ſtretched off to the northward.

I had never met with a behaviour ſo free from reſerve and ſuſpicion, in my intercourſe with any tribes of ſavages, as we experienced in the people of this iſland. It was very common for them to ſend up into the ſhip the ſeveral articles they brought off for barter; afterward, they would come in themſelves, and make their bargains on the quarter-deck. The people of Otaheite, even after our repeated viſits, do not care to put ſo much confidence in us.

On the 23d, we tacked to the ſouthward, and had hopes of weathering the iſland. We ſhould have ſucceeded, if the wind had not died away, and left us to the mercy of a great ſwell, which carried us faſt toward the land, which was not two leagues diſtant. At length ſome light puffs of wind, which came with ſhowers of rain, put us out of danger. While we lay, as it were becalmed, ſeveral of the iſlanders came off with hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots.

At four in the afternoon, after purchaſing every thing that the natives had brought off, which was full as much as we had occaſion for, we made ſail and ſtretched to the north. At midnight we tacked and ſtood to the ſouth-eaſt. Upon a ſup-

poſition that the Diſcovery would ſee us tack, the ſignal was omitted; but ſhe did not ſee us, as we afterward found, and continued ſtanding to the north; for, at day-light next morning, ſhe was not in ſight. At ſix in the evening, the ſouthernmoſt extreme of the iſland bore ſouth-weſt, the neareſt ſhore ſeven or eight miles diſtant; ſo that we had now ſucceeded in getting to the windward of the iſland, which we had aimed at with ſo much perſeverance.

The Diſcovery, however, was not yet to be ſeen. But the wind, as we had it, being very favourable for her to follow us, I concluded that it would not be long before ſhe joined us.

We began to be in want of freſh proviſion on the 30th. At ten o'clock next morning, we were met by the iſlanders with fruit and roots; but in all the canoes were only three ſmall pigs.

Before day-break the atmoſphere was again loaded with heavy clouds; and the new year was uſhered in with very hard rain, which continued at intervals till paſt ten o'clock. We lay to, trading with the inhabitants till three o'clock in the afternoon; when, having a tolerable ſupply, we made ſail, with a view of proceeding to look for the Diſcovery.

The three following days were ſpent in running down the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the iſland.

On the 5th in the morning, we paſſed the ſouth point of the iſland. On this there ſtands a pretty large village, the inhabitants of which thronged off to the ſhip with hogs and women. It was not poſſible to keep the latter from coming on board. This part of the country, from its appearance, did not ſeem capable of affording any vegetables. Marks of its having been laid waſte

by the explotion of a volcano, every where preſented themſelves: the devaſtation that it had made in this neighbourhood, was viſible to the naked eye.

Between ten and eleven next morning, we ſaw with pleaſure the Diſcovery coming round the ſouth point of the iſland; and, at one in the afternoon, ſhe joined us. Captain Clerke then coming on board, informed me that he had cruiſed four or five days where we were ſeparated, and then plied round the eaſt ſide of the iſland; but that, meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been carried to ſome diſtance from the coaſt. He had one of the iſlanders on board all this time, who had remained there from choice, and had refuſed to quit the ſhip, though opportunities had offered.

For ſeveral days we kept, as uſual, ſtanding off and on, with occaſional viſits from the natives. At day-break, on the 16th, ſeeing the appearance of a bay, I ſent Mr. Bligh, with a boat from each ſhip, to examine it, being at this time three leagues off. Canoes now began to arrive from all parts; ſo that before ten o'clock, there were not fewer than a thouſand about the two ſhips, moſt of them crowded with people, and well laden with hogs and other productions of the iſland. One of our viſiters took out of the ſhip a boat's rudder. He was diſcovered; but too late to recover it. I thought this a good opportunity to ſhew theſe people the uſe of firearms; and two or three muſkets, and as many four-pounders were fired over the canoe, which carried off the rudder. As it was not intended that any of the ſhot ſhould take effect, the ſurrounding multitude of natives ſeemed rather more ſurpriſed than frightened.

In

In the evening Mr. Bligh returned, and reported that he had found a bay, in which was good anchorage, and freſh water. Here I reſolved to carry the ſhips to refit, and ſupply ourſelves with every refreſhment the place could afford. Numbers of our viſiters requeſt permiſſion to ſleep on board. Curioſity was not the only motive, at leaſt with ſome; for the next morning, ſeveral things were miſſing, which determined me not to entertain ſo many another night.

At eleven o'clock in the forenoon we anchored in the bay, which is called by the natives Karakakooa. The ſhips continued to be much crowded with natives, and were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes. I had no where, in the courſe of my voyages, ſeen ſo numerous a body of people aſſembled at one place. For beſides thoſe in canoes, all the ſhore was covered with ſpectators, and many hundreds were ſwimming round the ſhips like ſhoals of fiſh. We could not but be ſtruck with the ſingularity of this ſcene; few now lamented our having failed in our endeavours to find a northern paſſage homeward laſt ſummer. To this diſappointment we owed our having it in our power to reviſit the Sandwich Iſlands, and to enrich our voyage with a diſcovery which, though the laſt, ſeemed, in many reſpects, to be the moſt important that had hitherto been made by Europeans, throughout the extent of the Pacific Ocean.

While Captain Cook ſeems to have enjoyed the idea of this diſcovery, little did he imagine that his labours were ſo ſoon to be terminated at this diſaſtrous place, which will ever derive a diſgrace-

ful immortality from his fate. Here his journal ends; and as we have recorded the principal events of his uſeful life, we ſhall detail the melancholy circumſtances that led to his lamented death, preſerving as nearly as poſſible the words of his amiable coadjutor, Captain King, whoſe account of the voyage now commences.

Karakakooa Bay is ſituated on the weſt ſide of the Iſland of Owhyhee, in a diſtrict called Akona. It is about a mile in depth, and bounded by two low points of land at the diſtance of half a league from each other. On the north point, which is flat and barren, ſtands the village of Kowrowa; and in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of tall cocoa-nut trees, there is another village of a more conſiderable ſize, called Kakooa. This bay appearing to Captain Cook a proper place to refit the ſhips, and lay in an additional ſupply of water and proviſions, we moored on the north ſide.

As ſoon as the inhabitants perceived our intention of anchoring in the bay, they came off from the ſhore in aſtoniſhing numbers, and expreſſed their joy by ſinging and ſhouting, and exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant geſtures.

Among the chiefs that came on board the Reſolution, was a young man called Pareea, whom we ſoon perceived to be a perſon of great authority. On preſenting himſelf to Captain Cook, he told him that he was jakanee to the king of the iſland, who was at that time engaged on a military expedition at Mowee, and was expected to return within three or four days. A few preſents from Captain Cook attached him entirely to our intereſts, and he became exceedingly uſe-

ful

ful to us in the management of his countrymen, as we had ſoon occaſion to experience; for we had not been long at anchor, when it was obſerved that the Diſcovery had ſuch a number of people hanging on one ſide, as occaſioned her to heel conſiderably; and that the men were unable to keep of the crowds which continued preſſing into her. Captain Cook, being apprehenſive that ſhe might ſuffer ſome injury, pointed out the danger to Pareea, who immediately went to their aſſiſtance, cleared the ſhip of its incumbrances, and drove away the canoes that ſurrounded her.

The authority of the chiefs over the inferior people appeared, from this incident, to be of the moſt deſpotic kind. A ſimilar inſtance of it happened the ſame day on board the Reſolution, where the crowd being ſo great as to impede the neceſſary buſineſs of the ſhip, we were obliged to have recourſe to the aſſiſtance of Kakeena, another of their chiefs, who had likewiſe attached himſelf to Captain Cook. The inconvenience we laboured under being made known, he immediately ordered his countrymen to quit the veſſel; and we were not a little ſurpriſed to ſee them jump overboard without a moment's heſitation.

Both theſe chiefs were men of ſtrong and well proportioned bodies, and of countenances remarkably pleaſing; Kaneena, eſpecially, was one of the fineſt men I ever ſaw. He was about ſix feet high, had regular and expreſſive features, with lively dark eyes; his carriage was eaſy, firm, and graceful.

The inhabitants had hitherto behaved with great fairneſs and honeſty, but we now found the caſe exceedingly altered. The immenſe

crowd of iſlanders, which blocked up every part of the ſhips, not only afforded frequent opportunity of pilfering, without riſk of diſcovery; but our inferiority in number held forth a proſpect of eſcaping with impunity, in caſe of detection. Another circumſtance, to which we attributed this alteration in their behaviour, was the preſence and encouragement of their chiefs; for generally tracing the booty into the poſſeſſion of ſome men of conſequence, we had the ſtrongeſt reaſon to ſuſpect that theſe depredations were committed at their inſtigation.

Soon after the Reſolution had got into her ſtation, our two friends, Pareea and Kaneena, brought on board a third chief, named Koah, who, we were told, was a prieſt, and had been, in his youth, a diſtinguiſhed warrior. He was a little old man, of an emaciated figure; his eyes exceedingly ſore and red, and his body covered with a white leprous ſcurf, the effects of an immoderate uſe of the ava. Being led into the cabin, he approached Captain Cook with great veneration, and threw over his ſhoulders a piece of red cloth, which he had brought along with him. Then ſtepping a few paces back, he made an offering of a ſmall pig, which he held in his hand, whilſt he pronounced a diſcourſe that laſted for a conſiderable time.

When this ceremony was over, Koah dined with Captain Cook, eating plentifully of what was ſet before him; but, like the reſt of the inhabitants of the iſlands in theſe ſeas, could ſcarcely be prevailed on to taſte a ſecond time our wine or ſpirits. In the evening, Captain Cook, attended by Mr. Bayly and myſelf, accompanied him on ſhore. We landed at the

beach,

beach, and were received by four men, who carried wands tipt with dog's hair, and marched before us, pronouncing with a loud voice a ſhort ſentence, in which we could only diſtinguiſh the word Orono*. The crowd which had been collected on the ſhore, retired at our approach; and not a perſon was to be ſeen, except a few lying proſtrate on the ground, near the huts of the adjoining village.

Before I proceed to relate the adoration that was paid to Captain Cook, and the peculiar ceremonies with which he was received on this fatal iſland, it will be neceſſary to deſcribe a morai, or burying-place, ſituated at the ſouth ſide of the beach at Kakooa. It was a ſquare ſolid pile of ſtones, about forty yards long, twenty broad, and fourteen in height. The top was flat and well paved, and ſurrounded by a wooden rail, on which were fixed the ſculls of the captives ſacrificed on the death of their chiefs. In the centre of the area, ſtood a ruinous old building of wood, connected with the rail on each ſide, by a ſtone wall, which divided the whole ſpace into two parts. On the ſide next the country were five poles, upward of twenty feet high, ſupporting an irregular kind of ſcaffold; on the oppoſite ſide, toward the ſea, ſtood two ſmall houſes, with a covered communication.

We were conducted by Koah to the top of this pile, by an eaſy aſcent. At the entrance we ſaw two large wooden images, with features violently diſtorted, and a long piece of carved wood, of a

* Captain Cook generally went by this name amongſt the natives of Owhyhee; but we could never learn its preciſe meaning, though it was certainly a title of religious veneration.

conical

conical form inverted, rising from the top of their heads; the reſt was without form, and wrapped round with red cloth. We were here met by a tall young man, with a long beard, who preſented Captain Cook to the images; and, after chanting a kind of hymn, in which he was joined by Koah, they led us to that end of the morai where the five poles were fixed. At the foot of them were twelve images, ranged in a ſemicircular form, and before the middle figure ſtood a high ſtand or table, on which lay a putrid hog, and under it pieces of ſugar-cane, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, plantains, and ſweet potatoes. Koah, having placed the captain under this ſtand, took down the hog, and held it toward him; and after having a ſecond time addreſſed him in a long ſpeech, pronounced with much vehemence and rapidity, he let it fall on the ground, and led him to the ſcaffolding, which they began to climb together, not without great riſk of falling. At this time we ſaw, coming in ſolemn proceſſion, at the entrance of the top of the morai, ten men carrying a live hog, and a large piece of red cloth. Being advanced a few paces, they ſtopped, and proſtrated themſelves; and Kaireekeea, the young man above mentioned, went to them, and receiving the cloth, carried it to Koah, who wrapped it round the captain, and afterward offered him the hog, which was brought by Kaireekeea with the ſame ceremony.

Whilſt Captain Cook was aloft, in this awkward ſituation, ſwathed round with red cloth, and with difficulty keeping his hold amongſt the pieces of rotten ſcaffolding, Kaireekeea and Koah began their office, chanting ſometimes in concert, and ſometimes alternately. This laſted a conſiderable

derable time; at length Koah let the hog drop, when he and the captain deſcended together. He then led him to the images before mentioned, and having ſaid ſomething to each in a ſneering tone, ſnapped his fingers at them as he paſſed, he brought him to that in the centre, which, from its being covered with red cloth, appeared to be in greater eſtimation than the reſt. Before this figure he proſtrated himſelf, and kiſſed it; deſiring Captain Cook to do the ſame; who ſuffered himſelf to be directed by Koah throughout the whole of this ceremony.

We were now led back into the other diviſion of the morai, where there was a ſpace ten or twelve feet ſquare, ſunk about three feet below the level of the area. Into this we deſcended, and Captain Cook was ſeated between two wooden idols, Koah ſupporting one of his arms, whilſt I was deſired to ſupport the other. At this time arrived a ſecond proceſſion of natives, carrying a baked hog, and a pudding, ſome bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetables, which were preſented as before.

When this offering was concluded, the natives ſat down, fronting us, and began to cut up the baked hog, to peel the vegetables, and break the cocoa-nuts; whilſt others employed themſelves in brewing the ava; which is done by chewing it in the ſame manner as at the Friendly Iſlands. Kaireekeea then took part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, which he chewed, and wrapped it in a piece of cloth, rubbed with it the captain's face, head, hands, arms, and ſhoulders. The ava was then handed round, and, after we had taſted it, Koah and Pareea began to pull the fleſh of the hog in pieces, and to put it into our mouths. I

had

had no great objection to be fed by Pareea, who was very cleanly in his perſon; but Captain Cook, who was ſerved by Koah, recollecting the putrid hog, could not ſwallow a morſel; and his reluctance, as may be ſuppoſed, was not diminiſhed, when the old man, according to his own mode of civility, had chewed it for him.

When this laſt ceremony was finiſhed, which Captain Cook put an end to as ſoon as he decently could, we quitted the morai, after diſtributing amongſt the people ſome pieces of iron and other trifles, with which they ſeemed highly gratified. The men with wands conducted us to the boats, repeating the ſame words as before. The people again retired, and the few that remained, proſtrated themſelves as we paſſed along the ſhore. We immediately went on board, our minds full of what we had ſeen, and extremely well ſatisfied with the good diſpoſitions of our new friends, whoſe reſpect to the perſon of Captain Cook ſeemed approaching to adoration.

The next morning, I went on ſhore with a guard of eight marines, including the corporal and lieutenant, having orders to erect the obſervatory in ſuch a ſituation as might beſt enable me to ſuperintend and protect the waterers, and the other working parties that were to be on ſhore. As we were viewing a ſpot conveniently ſituated for this purpoſe in the middle of the village, Pareea offered to pull down ſome houſes that would have obſtructed our obſervations. However, we thought it proper to decline this offer, and fixed on a field of ſweet potatoes adjoining to the morai, which was readily granted us; and the prieſts, to prevent the intruſion of the natives, immediately conſecrated the place,

by

by fixing their wands round the wall by which it was incloſed.

No canoes ever preſumed to land near us; the natives ſat on the wall, but none offered to come within the tabooed ſpace, till he had obtained our permiſſion. But though the men, at our requeſt, would come acroſs the field with proviſions, yet not all our endeavours could prevail on the women to approach us. This circumſtance afforded no ſmall matter of amuſement to our friends on board, where the crowds of people, and particularly of women, that continued to flock thither, obliged them almoſt every hour to clear the veſſel, in order to have room to do the neceſſary duties of the ſhip.

From the 19th to the 24th, when Pareea and Koah left us to attend Terreeoboo, who had landed on ſome other part of the iſland, nothing very material happened on board.

We had not been long ſettled at the obſervatory, before we diſcovered in our neighbourhood, the habitations of a ſociety of prieſts, whoſe regular attendance at the morai had excited our curioſity. Their huts ſtood round a pond of water, and were ſurrounded by a grove of cocoa-nut trees, which ſeparated them from the beach and the reſt of the village, and gave the place an air of religious retirement. On my acquainting Captain Cook with theſe circumſtances, he reſolved to pay them a viſit; and, as he expected, was received in the ſame manner as before.

During the reſt of the time we remained in the bay, whenever Captain Cook came on ſhore, he was attended by one of theſe prieſts, who went before him, giving notice that the Orono had landed, and ordering the people to proſtrate themſelves,

themſelves. The ſame perſon alſo conſtantly accompanied him on the water, ſtanding in the bow of the boat, with a wand in his hand, and giving notice of his approach to the natives, who were in canoes, on which they immediately left off paddling, and lay down on their faces, till he had paſſed.

The civilities of this ſociety were not, however, confined to mere ceremony and parade. Our party on ſhore received from them, every day, a conſtant ſupply of hogs and vegetables, more than ſufficient for our ſubſiſtence; and ſeveral canoes, loaded with proviſions, were ſent to the ſhips with the ſame punctuality. No return was ever demanded, or even hinted at in the moſt diſtant manner. Their preſents were made with a regularity, more like the diſcharge of a religious duty, than the effect of mere liberality.

As every thing relating to the character and behaviour of this people muſt be intereſting to the reader, on account of the tragedy that was afterward acted here, it will be proper to acquaint him, that we had not always ſo much reaſon to be ſatisfied with the conduct of the warrior chiefs, or earees, as with that of our prieſts. In all our dealings with the former, we found them ſufficiently attentive to their own intereſts; and beſides their habit of ſtealing, which may admit of ſome excuſe, from the univerſality of the practice amongſt the iſlanders of theſe ſeas, they make uſe of other artifices equally diſhonourable.

On the 24th, we were a good deal ſurpriſed to find that no canoes were ſuffered to put off from the ſhore, and that the natives kept cloſe to their houſes.

houſes. After ſeveral hours ſuſpenſe, we learned that the bay was tabooed, and all intercourſe with us interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo. In the afternoon of next day, Terreeoboo viſited the ſhips in a private manner, attended only by one canoe, in which were his wife and children. He ſtaid on board till near ten o'clock, when he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

The next day, about noon, the king, in a large canoe, attended by two others, ſet out from the village, and paddled toward the ſhip in great ſtate. Their appearance was grand and magnificent. In the firſt canoe was Terreeoboo and his chiefs, dreſſed in their rich feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with long ſpears and daggers; in the ſecond came the venerable Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, and his brethren, with their idols diſplayed on red cloth. The third canoe was filled with hogs and various ſorts of vegetables. As they went along, the prieſts in the centre canoe ſung their hymns with great ſolemnity; and, after paddling round the ſhips, inſtead of going on board, as was expected, they made toward the ſhore at the beach where we were ſtationed.

As ſoon as I ſaw them approaching, I ordered out our little guard to receive the king; and Captain Cook, perceiving that he was going on ſhore, followed him, and arrived nearly at the ſame time. We conducted them into the tent, where they had ſcarcely been ſeated, when the king roſe up, and in a very graceful manner threw over the captain's ſhoulders the cloak he himſelf wore, put a feathered helmet upon his head, and a curious fan into his hand. He alſo

ſpread at his feet five or ſix other cloaks, all exceedingly beautiful, and of the greateſt value. His attendants then brought four very large hogs, with ſugar-canes, cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit; and this part of the ceremony was concluded by the king's exchanging names with Captain Cook, which, amongſt all the iſlanders of the Pacific Ocean, is eſteemed the ſtrongeſt pledge of friendſhip. A proceſſion of prieſts, with a venerable old perſonage at their head, now appeared, followed by a long train of men leading large hogs, and others carrying plantains, ſweet potatoes, &c. By the looks and geſtures of Kaireekeea, I immediately knew the old man to be the chief of the prieſts, on whoſe bounty we had ſo long ſubſiſted. He had a piece of red cloth in his hands, which he wrapped round Captain Cook's ſhoulders, and afterward preſented him with a ſmall pig in the uſual form.

As ſoon as the formalities of the meeting were over, Captain Cook carried Terreeoboo, and as many chiefs as the pinnace could hold, on board the Reſolution. They were received with every mark of reſpect that could be ſhewn them; and Captain Cook, in return for the feathered cloak, put a linen ſhirt on the king, and girt his own hanger round him. The ancient Kaoo, and about half a dozen more old chiefs, remained on ſhore, and took up their abode at the prieſts houſes. During all this time not a canoe was ſeen in the bay, and the natives either kept within their huts, or lay proſtrate on the ground.

The quiet and inoffenſive behaviour of the natives having taken away every apprehenſion of danger, we did not heſitate to truſt ourſelves amongſt them at all times, and in all ſituations.

The officers of both ſhips went daily up the country in ſmall parties, or even ſingly, and frequently remained out the whole night. It would be endleſs to recount all the inſtances of kindneſs and civility which we received upon thoſe occaſions. Wherever we went, the people flocked about us, eager to offer every aſſiſtance in their power, and highly gratified if their ſervices were accepted.

The ſatisfaction we derived from their gentleneſs and hoſpitality, was, however, frequently interrupted by that propenſity to ſtealing, which they have in common with all the other iſlanders of theſe ſeas. This circumſtance was the more diſtreſſing, as it ſometimes obliged us to have recourſe to acts of ſeverity, which we ſhould willingly have avoided, if the neceſſity of the caſe had not abſolutely called for them.

On the 28th, Captain Clerke, whoſe ill health confined him, for the moſt part, on board, paid Terreeoboo his firſt viſit, at his hut on ſhore. He was received with the ſame formalities as were obſerved with Captain Cook; and, on his coming away, though the viſit was quite unexpected, he received a preſent of thirty large hogs, and as much fruit and roots as his crew could conſume in a week.

As we had not yet ſeen any thing of their ſports or athletic exerciſes, the natives, at the requeſt of ſome of our officers, entertained us this evening with a boxing-match. Though theſe games were much inferior, as well in point of ſolemnity and magnificence, as in the ſkill and powers of the combatants, to what we had ſeen exhibited at the Friendly Iſlands; yet, as they differed in ſome particulars, it may not be improper to give a ſhort account of them. We

found a vaſt concourſe of people aſſembled on a level ſpot of ground, at a little diſtance from our tents. A long ſpace was left vacant in the midſt of them, at the upper end of which ſat the judges, under three ſtandards, from which hung ſlips of cloth of various colours, the ſkins of two wild geeſe, a few ſmall birds, and bunches of feathers. When the ſports were ready to begin, the ſignal was given by the judges, and immediately two combatants appeared. They came forward ſlowly, lifting up their feet very high behind, and drawing their hands along the ſoles. As they approached, they frequently eyed each other from head to foot, in a contemptuous manner, caſting ſeveral arch looks at the ſpectators, ſtraining their muſcles, and uſing a variety of affected geſtures. Being advanced within reach of each other, they ſtood with both arms held out ſtraight before their faces, at which part all their blows were aimed. They ſtruck in, what appeared to our eyes, an awkward manner, with a full ſwing of the arm; made no attempt to parry, but eluded their adverſary's attack by an inclination of the body, or by retreating. The battle was quickly decided; for if either of them was knocked down, or even fell by accident, he was conſidered as vanquiſhed, and the victor expreſſed his triumph by a variety of geſtures, which uſually excited, as was intended, a loud laugh among the ſpectators. As theſe games were given at our deſire, we found it was univerſally expected that we ſhould have borne our part in them; but our people, though much preſſed by the natives, turned a deaf ear to their challenge, remembering full well the blows they got at the Friendly Iſlands.

This

This day died William Watman, a ſeaman of the gunner's crew; who, with the ſincereſt attachment, had followed Captain Cook's fortunes for a number of years.

At the requeſt of the king of the iſland, he was buried on the morai, and the ceremony was performed with as much ſolemnity as our ſituation permitted*. Old Kaoo and his brethren were ſpectators, and preſerved the moſt profound ſilence and attention, whilſt the ſervice was reading. When we began to fill up the grave, they approached it with great reverence, threw in a dead pig, ſome cocoa-nuts, and plantains; and for three nights afterward, they ſurrounded it, ſacrificing hogs, and performing their uſual ceremonies of hymns and prayers, which continued till day-break.

The ſhips being in great want of fuel, the captain deſired me, on the 2d of February, to treat with the prieſts, for the purchaſe of the rail that ſurrounded the top of the morai. I muſt confeſs, I had at firſt, ſome doubt about the decency of this propoſal, and was apprehenſive, that even the bare mention of it might be conſidered by them, as a piece of ſhocking impiety. In this, however, I found myſelf miſtaken. Not the ſmalleſt ſurpriſe was expreſſed at the application, and the wood was readily given, even without ſtipulating for any thing in return.

Terreeoboo and his chiefs had, for ſome days paſt, been very inquiſitive about the time of our departure. This circumſtance had excited in me a great curioſity to know what opinion this

* May not this public diſplay of the mortality of their viſiters, have tended to leſſen the exalted ideas which the natives, at firſt, ſeemed to entertain.

people had formed of us, and what were their ideas reſpecting the cauſe and objects of our voyage. I took ſome pains to ſatisfy myſelf on theſe points; but could never learn any thing farther than that they imagined we came from ſome country where proviſions had failed; and that our viſit to them was merely for the purpoſe of filling our bellies. Indeed, the meagre appearance of ſome of our crew, the hearty appetites with which we ſat down to their freſh proviſions, and our great anxiety to purchaſe and carry off, as much as we were able, led them naturally enough to ſuch a concluſion. It was ridiculous enough to ſee them ſtroking the ſides, and patting the bellies, of the ſailors (who were certainly much improved in the ſleekneſs of their looks, during our ſhort ſtay in the iſland) and telling them, partly by ſigns, and partly by words, that it was time for them to go; but if they would come again the next bread-fruit ſeaſon, they ſhould be better able to ſupply their wants. On our telling Terreeoboo we ſhould leave the iſland on the next day but one, we obſerved that a ſort of proclamation was immediately made, through the villages, to require the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for the king to preſent to the Orono on his departure.

The next day being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and myſelf to attend him, on the 3d, to the place where Kaoo reſided. On our arrival, we found the ground covered with parcels of cloth; a vaſt quantity of red and yellow feathers, tied to the fibres of cocoa-nut huſk; and a great number of hatchets, and other pieces of iron-ware, that had been got in barter from us. At a little diſtance from theſe

lay

lay an immenſe quantity of vegetables of every kind, and near them was a very large herd of hogs. At firſt we imagined the whole to be intended as a preſent for us, till Kaireekeea informed me that it was a gift, or tribute, from the people of that diſtrict to the king; and, accordingly, as ſoon as we were ſeated, they brought all the bundles, and laid them ſeverally at Terreeoboo's feet, who gave all the hogs and vegetables, and two-thirds of the cloth, to Captain Cook and myſelf. We were aſtoniſhed at the value and magnitude of this preſent, which far exceeded every thing of the kind we had ſeen, either at the Friendly or Society Iſlands.

The ſame day we quitted the morai, and got the tents and aſtronomical inſtruments on board. The charm of the taboo was now removed; and here, I hope I may be permitted to relate a trifling occurrence, in which I was principally concerned. Having had the command of the party on ſhore, during the whole time we were in the bay, I had an opportunity of becoming well acquainted with the natives.

I ſpared no endeavours to conciliate their affections and gain their eſteem; and had the good fortune to ſucceed ſo far, that, when the time of our departure was made known, I was ſtrongly ſolicited to remain behind, not without offers of the moſt flattering kind. When I excuſed myſelf by ſaying, that Captain Cook would not give his conſent, they propoſed that I ſhould retire into the mountains, where they ſaid they would conceal me, till after the departure of the ſhips; and on my farther aſſuring them that the captain would not leave the bay without me, Terreeoboo and Kaoo waited upon Captain Cook, whoſe ſon

they

they ſuppoſed I was, with a formal requeſt that I might be left behind. The captain, to avoid giving a poſitive refuſal to an offer ſo kindly intended, told them that he could not part with me at that time, but that he ſhould return to the iſland next year, and would then endeavour to ſettle the matter to their ſatisfaction.

Early in the morning of the 4th of February, we unmoored and ſailed out of the bay, and were followed by a great number of canoes. Captain Cook's deſign was to finiſh the ſurvey of Owhyhee, before he viſited the other iſlands, in hopes of meeting with a road better ſheltered than the bay we had juſt left.

We had calm weather this and the following day, which made our progreſs to the northward very ſlow. In the morning of the 6th, having paſſed the weſternmoſt point of the iſland, we found ourſelves abreaſt of a deep bay, called by the natives Toe-yah-yah. We had great hopes that this bay would furniſh us with a ſafe and commodious harbour, as we ſaw to the north-eaſt ſeveral fine ſtreams of water. On examination, however, it was found unfit for our purpoſe.

After encountering ſome gales of wind with immaterial damage, on the 8th at day-break, we found that the foremaſt had given way. This accident induced Captain Cook to return to Karakakooa Bay. On the 10th, the weather became moderate, and a few canoes came off to us, from which we learnt that the late ſtorms had done much miſchief, and that ſeveral large canoes had been loſt. During the remainder of the day we kept beating to windward, and before night we were within a mile of the bay; but not chuſing to run on while it was dark, we ſtood off and on

till

till day-light next morning, when we dropt anchor nearly in the ſame place as before.

We were employed the whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th, in getting out the foremaſt, and ſending it, with the carpenters, on ſhore. As theſe repairs were likely to take up ſeveral days, Mr: Bayly and myſelf got the aſtronomical apparatus on ſhore the 12th, and pitched our tents on the morai, having with us a guard of a corporal and ſix marines. We renewed our friendly correſpondence with the prieſts, who, for the greater ſecurity of the workmen and their tools, tabooed the place where the maſt lay, ſticking their wands round it as before. The ſailmakers were alſo ſent on ſhore, to repair the damages which had taken place in their department during the late gales.

Upon coming to anchor, we were ſurpriſed to find our reception very different from what it had been on our firſt arrival; no ſhouts, no buſtle, no confuſion; but a ſolitary bay, with only here and there a canoe ſtealing cloſe along the ſhore. The impulſe of curioſity, which had before operated to ſo great a degree, might now, indeed, be ſuppoſed to have ceaſed; but the hoſpitable treatment we had invariably met with, and the friendly footing on which we parted, gave us ſome reaſon to expect that they would again have flocked about us with great joy on our return.

We were forming various conjectures upon the occaſion of this extraordinary appearance, when our anxiety was at length relieved by the return of a boat which had been ſent on ſhore, and brought us word that Terreeoboo was abſent, and had left the bay under the taboo. Though

this

this account appeared very ſatisfactory to moſt of us, yet others were of opinion, that the interdiction of all intercourſe with us, on pretence of the king's abſence, was only to give him time to conſult the chiefs in what manner it might be proper to treat us. Whether theſe ſuſpicions were well founded, or the account given by the natives was the truth, we were never able to aſcertain. For though it is not improbable that our ſudden return, for which they could ſee no apparent cauſe, and the neceſſity of which we afterward found it very difficult to make them comprehend, might occaſion ſome alarm; yet the unſuſpicious conduct of Terreeoboo, who, on his ſuppoſed arrival the next morning, came immediately to viſit Captain Cook, and the conſequent return of the natives to their former friendly intercourſe with us, are ſtrong proofs that they neither meant, nor apprehended, any change of conduct.

Toward the evening of the 13th, however, the officer who commanded the watering party of the Diſcovery, came to inform me that ſeveral chiefs had aſſembled at the well near the beach, driving away the natives, whom we had hired to aſſiſt the ſailors in rolling down the caſks to the ſhore. He told me at the ſame time that he thought their behaviour extremely ſuſpicious, and that they meant to give him ſome farther diſturbance. At his requeſt, therefore, I ſent a marine along with him, but ſuffered him to take only his ſide-arms. In a ſhort time the officer returned, and on his acquainting me that the iſlanders had armed themſelves with ſtones, and were grown very tumultuous, I went myſelf to the ſpot, attended by a marine, with his muſket.

Seeing

Seeing us approach, they threw away their ſtones, and on my ſpeaking to ſome of the chiefs, the mob were driven away, and thoſe who choſe it, were ſuffered to aſſiſt in filling the caſks.

Soon after our return to the tents, we were alarmed by a continued fire of muſkets, from the Diſcovery, which we obſerved to be directed at a canoe that we ſaw paddling toward the ſhore in great haſte, purſued by one of our ſmall boats. We immediately concluded that the firing was in conſequence of ſome theft, and Captain Cook ordered me to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to ſeize the people as they came on ſhore. Accordingly we ran toward the place where we ſuppoſed the canoe would land, but were too late; the people having quitted it, and made their eſcape into the country before our arrival; but the goods ſtolen had been recovered.

During our abſence, a difference of a more ſerious and unpleaſant nature had happened. The officer, who had been ſent in the ſmall boat, and was returning on board with the goods which had been reſtored, obſerving Captain Cook and me engaged in the purſuit of the offenders, thought it his duty to ſeize the canoe, which was left drawn up on the ſhore Unfortunately this canoe belonged to Pareea, who arriving at the ſame moment from on board the Diſcovery, claimed his property with many proteſtations of his innocence. The officer refuſing to give it up, and being joined by the crew of the pinnace, a ſcuffle enſued, in which Pareea was knocked down by a violent blow upon his head with an oar. The natives, who were collected about the ſpot, and had hitherto been peaceable ſpectators, immediately attacked our people with

ſuch a ſhower of ſtones, as forced them to retreat with great precipitation, and ſwim off to a rock at ſome diſtance from the ſhore. The pinnace was immediately ranſacked by the iſlanders; and but for the timely interpoſition of Pareea, who ſeemed to have recovered from the blow, and forgot it at the ſame inſtant, would ſoon have been entirely demoliſhed. Having driven away the crowd, he made ſigns to our people, that they might come and take poſſeſſion of the pinnace, and that he would endeavour to get back the things which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, with a midſhipman's cap, and ſome other trifling articles of the plunder, and with much apparent concern at what had happened, aſked if the Orono would kill him, and whether he would permit him to come on board next day? On being aſſured that he ſhould be well received, he joined noſes (as their cuſtom is) with the officers, in token of friendſhip, and paddled over to the village of Kowrowa.

When Captain Cook was informed of what had paſſed, he expreſſed much uneaſineſs at it, and, as we were returning on board, "I am afraid," ſaid he, "that theſe people will oblige me to uſe ſome violent meaſures; for (he added) they muſt not be left to imagine, that they have gained an advantage over us."

Next morning, the 14th, at day-light, I went on board the Reſolution for the time-keeper, and in my way was hailed by the Diſcovery, and informed that their cutter had been ſtolen during the night, from the buoy where it was moored.

When I arrived on board, I found the marines arming, and Captain Cook loading his double-

barrelled

barrelled gun. It had been his uſual practice, whenever any thing of conſequence was loſt at any of the iſlands in this ocean, to get the king or ſome of the principal earees, on board, and to keep them as hoſtages till it was reſtored. This method, which had been always attended with ſucceſs, he meant to purſue on the preſent occaſion.

It was between ſeven and eight o'clock when we quitted the ſhip together; Captain Cook in the pinnace, having Mr. Phillips and nine marines with him, and myſelf in the ſmall boat. The laſt orders I received from him were, to quiet the minds of the natives, on our ſide of the bay, by aſſuring them they ſhould not be hurt; to keep my people together, and to be on my guard. We then parted; the captain went toward Kowrowa, where the king reſided; and I proceeded to the beach. My firſt care on going aſhore was, to give ſtrict orders to the marines to remain within the tent, to load their pieces with ball, and not to quit their arms. Afterward I took a walk to the huts of old Kaoo and the prieſts, and explained to them, as well as I could, the object of the hoſtile preparations, which had exceedingly alarmed them. I found that they had already heard of the cutter's being ſtolen, and I aſſured them, that though Captain Cook was reſolved to recover it, and to puniſh the authors of the theft, yet that they, and the people of the village on our ſide, need not be under the ſmalleſt apprehenſion of ſuffering any evil from us. Kaoo aſked me with great earneſtneſs, if Terreeoboo was to be hurt? I aſſured him he was not; and both he and the reſt of

his brethren ſeemed much ſatisfied with this aſſurance.

In the mean time, Captain Cook having called off the launch, which was ſtationed at the north point of the bay, and taken it along with him, proceeded to Kowrowa, and landed with the lieutenant and nine marines. He immediately marched to the village, where he was received with the uſual marks of reſpect; the people proſtrating themſelves before him, and bringing their accuſtomed offerings of ſmall hogs. Finding that there was no ſuſpicion of his deſign, his next ſtep was to enquire for Terreeoboo, and the two boys, his ſons, who had been his conſtant gueſts on board the Reſolution. In a ſhort time the boys returned along with the natives, who had been ſent in ſearch of them, and immediately led Captain Cook to the houſe where the king had ſlept. They found the old man juſt awoke from ſleep; and after a ſhort converſation about the loſs of the cutter, from which Captain Cook was convinced that he was in no wiſe privy to it, he invited him to return in the boat, and ſpend the day on board the Reſolution. To this propoſal the king readily conſented, and immediately got up to accompany him.

Things were in this proſperous train; the two boys being already in the pinnace, and the reſt of the party, having advanced near the waterſide, when an elderly woman, called Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of the king's favourite wives, came after him, and with many tears and entreaties, beſought him not to go on board. At the ſame time two chiefs, who came along with her, laid hold of him, and inſiſting that he ſhould go no farther, forced him

to

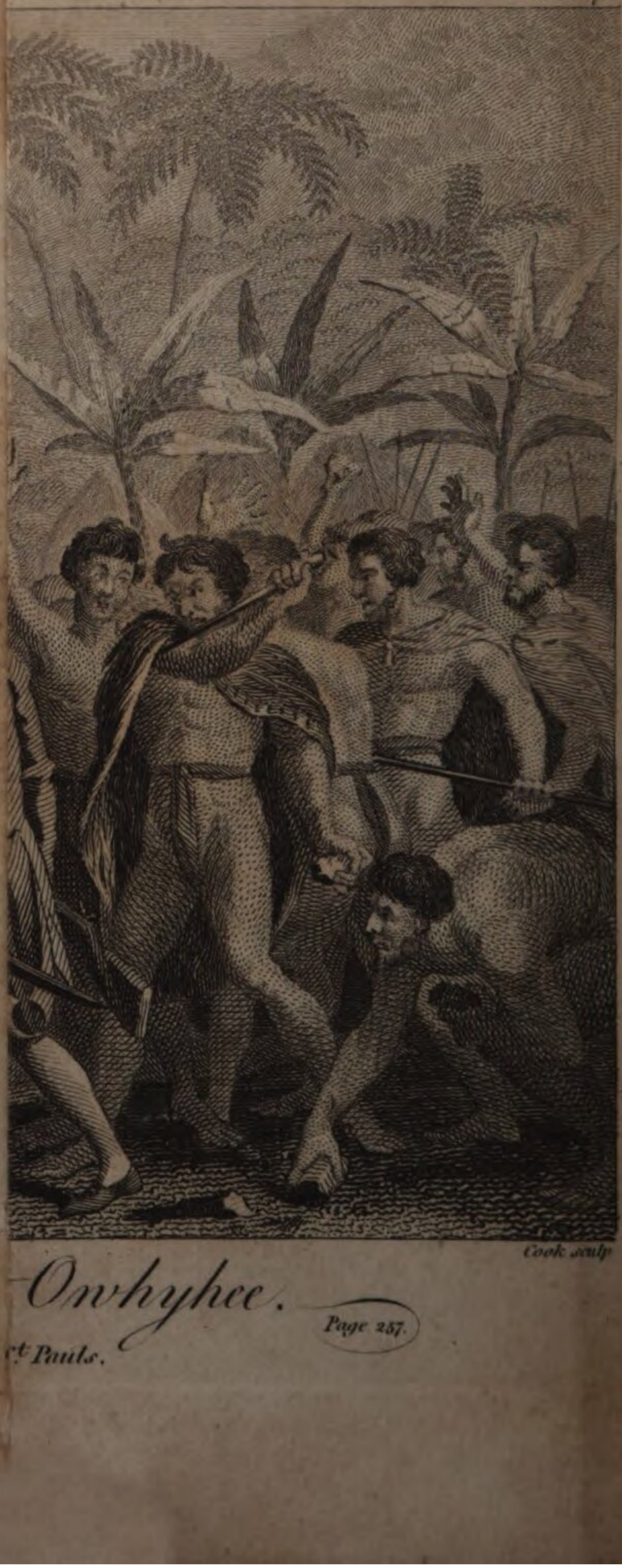
to ſit down. The natives, who were collecting in prodigious numbers along the ſhore, and had probably been alarmed by the firing of the great guns, and the appearances of hoſtility in the bay, began to throng round Captain Cook and their king. In this ſituation, the lieutenant of marines, obſerving that his men were huddled cloſe together in the crowd, and thus incapable of uſing their arms, if any occaſion ſhould require it, propoſed to the captain to draw them up along the rocks cloſe to the water's edge; and the crowd readily making way for them to paſs, they were drawn up in a line at the diſtance of about thirty yards from the place where the king was ſitting.

All this time the old king remained on the ground, with the ſtrongeſt marks of terror and dejection in his countenance; Captain Cook, not willing to abandon the object for which he had come on ſhore, continuing to urge him in the moſt preſſing manner to proceed; whilſt on the other hand, whenever the king appeared inclined to follow him, the chiefs, who ſtood round him, interpoſed, at firſt with prayers and entreaties, but afterwards having recourſe to force and violence, inſiſted on his ſtaying where he was. Captain Cook therefore finding that the alarm had ſpread too generally, and that it was in vain to think any longer of getting him off without bloodſhed, at laſt gave up the point; obſerving to Mr. Phillips, that it would be impoſſible to compel him to go on board, without running the riſk of killing a great number of the inhabitants.

Though the enterpriſe, which had carried Captain Cook on ſhore, had now failed and was

abandoned, yet his perſon did not appear to have been in the leaſt danger, till an accident happened which gave a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, which had been ſtationed acroſs the bay, having fired at ſome canoes that were attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed a chief of the firſt rank. The news of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook was, juſt as he had left the king, and was walking ſlowly toward the ſhore. The ferment it occaſioned was very conſpicuous; the women and children were immediately ſent off, and the men put on their war mats, and armed themſelves with ſpears and ſtones. One of the natives, having in his hands a ſtone and a long iron ſpike, (which they called a pahooa) came up to the captain, flouriſhing his weapon by way of defiance, and threatening to throw the ſtone. The captain deſired him to deſiſt; but the man perſiſting in his inſolence, he was at length provoked to fire a load of ſmall ſhot. The man having his mat on, which the ſhot were not able to penetrate, this had no other effect than to irritate and encourage them. Several ſtones were thrown at the marines; and one of the earees attempted to ſtab Mr. Phillips with his pahooa, but failed in the the attempt, and received from him a blow with the butend of his muſket. Captain Cook now fired his ſecond barrel, loaded with ball, and kil'ed one of the foremoſt of the natives. A general attack with ſtones immediately followed, which was anſwered by a diſcharge of muſketry from the marines, and the people in the boats. The iſlanders, contrary to the expectations of every one, ſtood the fire with great firmneſs; and before the marines had time to reload, they broke in upon them with

dreadful



Cook sculp

Onvhyhee.

Page 257.

Ct Pauls.

dreadful ſhouts and yells. What followed, was a ſcene of the utmoſt horror and confuſion.

Four of the marines were cut off amongſt the rocks in their retreat, and fell a ſacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three more were dangerouſly wounded; and the lieutenant, who had received a ſtab between the ſhoulders with a pahooa, having fortunately reſerved his fire, ſhot the man who had wounded him, juſt as he was going to repeat his blow. Our unfortunate commander, the laſt time he was ſeen diſtinctly, was ſtanding at the water's edge, and calling out to the boats to ceaſe firing, and to pull in. Whilſt he faced the natives, none of them had offered him any violence, but having turned about, to give his orders to the boats, he was ſtabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. On ſeeing him fall, the iſlanders ſet up a great ſhout, and his body was immediately dragged on ſhore, and ſurrounded by the enemy, who, ſnatching the dagger out of each other's hands, ſhewed a ſavage eagerneſs to have a ſhare in his deſtruction.

Thus fell our great and excellent commander! After a life of ſo much diſtinguiſhed and ſucceſsful enterpriſe, his death, as far as regards himſelf, cannot be reckoned premature; ſince he lived to finiſh the great work for which he ſeems to have been deſigned; and was rather removed from the enjoyment, than cut off from the acquiſition of glory. How ſincerely his loſs was felt and lamented by thoſe who had ſo long found their general ſecurity in his ſkill and conduct, and every conſolation, under their hardſhips, in his tenderneſs and humanity, it is neither neceſſary nor poſſible for me to deſcribe; much leſs

ſhall I attempt to paint the horror with which we were ſtruck, and the univerſal dejection and diſmay which followed ſo dreadful and unexpected a calamity.

It has been already related, that four of the marines, who attended Captain Cook, were killed by the iſlanders on the ſpot. The reſt, with Mr. Phillips their lieutenant, threw themſelves into the water, and eſcaped, under cover of a ſmart fire from the boats. On this occaſion, a remarkable inſtance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was ſhewn by that officer. For he had ſcarcely got into the boat, when ſeeing one of the marines, who was a bad ſwimmer, ſtruggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy, he immediately jumped into the ſea to his aſſiſtance, though much wounded himſelf; and after receiving a blow on the head from a ſtone, which had nearly ſent him to the bottom, he caught the man by the hair and brought him ſafe off.

As ſoon as the general conſternation, which the news of this calamity occaſioned throughout both crews, had a little ſubſided, their attention was called to our party at the morai, where the maſt and ſails were on ſhore, with a guard of only ſix marines. It is impoſſible for me to deſcribe the emotions of my own mind, during the time theſe tranſactions had been carrying on, at the other ſide of the bay. Being at the diſtance only of a ſhort mile from the village of Kowrowa, we could ſee diſtinctly, an immenſe crowd collected on the ſpot where Captain Cook had juſt before landed. We heard the firing of the muſketry, and could perceive ſome extraordinary buſtle and agitation in the multitude. We afterwards

wards ſaw the natives flying, the boats retire from the ſhore, and paſſing and repaſſing, in great ſtillneſs, between the ſhips. I muſt confeſs that my heart ſoon miſgave me. Where a life ſo dear and valuable was concerned, it was impoſſible not to be alarmed, by appearances both new and threatening.

My firſt care, on hearing the muſkets fired, was, to aſſure the people, who were aſſembled in conſiderable numbers round the wall of our conſecrated field, and ſeemed equally at a loſs with ourſelves how to account for what they had ſeen and heard, that they ſhould not be moleſted; and that, at all events, I was deſirous of continuing on peaceable terms with them. We remained in this poſture till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke, obſerving, through his teleſcope, that we were ſurrounded by the natives, and apprehending they meant to attack us, ordered two four pounders to be fired at them. Fortunately theſe guns, though well aimed, did no miſchief, and yet gave the natives a convincing proof of their power. One of the balls broke a cocoa-nut tree in the middle, under which a party of them were ſitting; and the other ſhivered a rock that ſtood in an exact line with them. As I had juſt before given them the ſtrongeſt aſſurances of their ſafety, I was exceedingly mortified at this act of hoſtility; and to prevent a repetition of it, immediately diſpatched a boat to acquaint Captain Clerke, that at preſent I was on the moſt friendly terms with the natives; and that, if occaſion ſhould hereafter ariſe, for altering my conduct toward them, I would hoiſt a jack, as a ſignal for him to afford us all the aſſiſtance in his ower.

We

We expected the return of the boat with the utmoſt impatience; and after remaining a quarter of an hour, under the moſt torturing anxiety and ſuſpenſe, our fears were at length confirmed, by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to ſtrike the tents as quickly as poſſible, and to ſend the ſails, that were repairing, on board. Juſt at the ſame moment, our friend Kaireekeea, having alſo received intelligence of the death of Captain Cook, from a native who had arrived from the other ſide of the bay, came to me with great ſorrow and dejection in his countenance, to enquire if it was true.

Our ſituation was at this time extremely critical and important. Not only our own lives, but the event of the expedition, and the return of at leaſt one of the ſhips, being involved in the ſame common danger. We had the maſt of the Reſolution, and the greateſt part of our ſails on ſhore, under the protection of only ſix marines: their loſs would have been irreparable; and though the natives had not as yet ſhewn the ſmalleſt diſpoſition to moleſt us, yet it was impoſſible to anſwer for the alteration, which the news of the tranſaction at Kowrowa might produce. I therefore thought it prudent to diſſemble my belief of the death of Captain Cook, and to deſire Kaireekeea to diſcourage the report; leſt either the fear of our reſentment, or the ſucceſsful example of their countrymen, might lead them to ſeize the favourable opportunity, which at this time offered itſelf, of giving us a ſecond blow.

Having placed the marines on the top of the morai, which formed a ſtrong and advantageous poſt, and left the command with Mr. Bligh, giving him the moſt poſitive directions to act entirely

on

on the defenſive, I went on board the Diſcovery, in order to repreſent to Captain Clerke the dangerous ſituation of our affairs. As ſoon as I quitted the ſpot, the natives began to annoy our people with ſtones; and I had ſcarcely reached the ſhip, before I heard the firing of the marines. I therefore returned inſtantly on ſhore, where I found things growing every moment more alarming. The natives were arming, and putting on their mats; and their numbers increaſed very faſt. I could alſo perceive ſeveral large bodies marching towards us, along the cliff which ſeparates the village of Kakooa from the north ſide of the bay, where the village of Kowrowa is ſituated.

They began at firſt to attack us with ſtones, from behind the walls of their incloſures, and finding no reſiſtance on our part, they ſoon grew more daring. A few reſolute fellows having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, ſuddenly made their appearance at the foot of the morai, with a deſign, as it ſeemed, of ſtorming it on the ſide next the ſea, which was its only acceſſible part; and were not diſloged, till after they had ſtood a conſiderable number of ſhot, and ſeen one of their party fall.

About this time, a ſtrong reinforcement from both ſhips having landed, the natives retreated behind their walls; which giving me acceſs to our friendly prieſts, I ſent one of them to endeavour to bring their countrymen to ſome terms, and to propoſe to them, that if they would deſiſt from throwing ſtones, I would not permit our men to fire. This truce was agreed to; and we were ſuffered to launch the maſt, and carry off the ſails and our aſtronomical apparatus unmoleſted. As ſoon as we had quitted the morai, they took poſſeſſion

of

of it, and ſome of them threw a few ſtones, but without doing us any miſchief.

It was half an hour paſt eleven o'clock when I got on board the Diſcovery, where I found no deciſive plan had been adopted for our future proceedings. The reſtitution of the boat, and the recovery of the body of Captain Cook, were the objects which, on all hands, we agreed to inſiſt on; and it was my opinion, that ſome vigorous ſteps ſhould be taken, in caſe the demand of them was not immediately complied with. However, after mature deliberation, it was determined to accompliſh theſe points by conciliatory meaſures, if poſſible.

In purſuance of this plan, it was determined that I ſhould proceed toward the ſhore, with the boats of both ſhips, well manned and armed, with a view to bring the natives to a parley, and, if poſſible, to obtain a conference with ſome of the chiefs.

I left the ſhips about four o'clock in the afternoon, and as we approached the ſhore, I perceived every indication of a hoſtile reception. The whole crowd of natives was in motion; the women and children retiring; the men putting on their war-mats, and arming themſelves with long ſpears and daggers. Concluding, therefore, that all attempts to bring them to a parley would be in vain, unleſs I firſt gave them ſome ground for mutual confidence, I ordered the armed boats to ſtop, and went on in the ſmall boat alone, with a white flag in my hand, which, by a general cry of joy from the natives, I had the ſatisfaction to find was inſtantly underſtood. The women immediately returned from the ſide of the hill, whither they had retired; the men threw off their mats;

and

and all ſat down together by the water-ſide, extending their arms, and inviting me to come on ſhore.

Though this behaviour was very expreſſive of a friendly diſpoſition, yet I could not help entertaining ſome ſuſpicions of its ſincerity. But when I ſaw Koah, with a boldneſs and aſſurance altogether unaccountable, ſwimming off toward the boat, with a white flag in his hand, I thought it neceſſary to return this mark of confidence, and therefore received him into the boat, though armed; a circumſtance which did not tend to leſſen my ſuſpicions. I muſt confeſs I had long harboured an unfavourable opinion of this man. I told him that I had come to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war againſt them, unleſs it was inſtantly reſtored. He aſſured me this ſhould be done as ſoon as poſſible, and that he would go himſelf for that purpoſe; and after begging of me a piece of iron, with as much aſſurance as if nothing extraordinary had happened, he leaped into the ſea, and ſwam aſhore, calling out to his countrymen that we were all friends again.

We waited near an hour with great anxiety for his return; during which time, the reſt of the boats had approached ſo near the ſhore, as to enter into converſation with a party of the natives at ſome diſtance from us; by whom they were plainly given to underſtand, that the body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country; but of this circumſtance I was not informed till our return to the ſhips.

After various delays, negotiations, and hoſtile preparations, about eight o'clock, it being very dark, a canoe was heard paddling toward the

ſhip; and as ſoon as it was ſeen, both the ſentinels on deck fired into it. There were two perſons in the canoe, and they immediately roared out "Tinnee," (which was the way in which they pronounced my name) and ſaid they were friends, and had ſomething for me belonging to Captain Cook. When they came on board, they threw themſelves at our feet, and appeared exceedingly frightened. Luckily neither of them was hurt, notwithſtanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe. One of them was the perſon who conſtantly attended Captain Cook with the circumſtances of ceremony already deſcribed; and who, though a man of rank in the iſland, could ſcarcely be hindered from performing for him the loweſt offices of a menial ſervant. After lamenting with abundance of tears, the loſs of the Orono, he told us that he had brought us a part of his body. He then preſented to us a ſmall bundle wrapped up in cloth, which he brought under his arm; and it is impoſſible to deſcribe the horror which ſeized us on finding in it a piece of human fleſh, about nine or ten pounds weight. This, he ſaid, was all that remained of the body; that the reſt was cut to pieces and burnt; but that the head and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the poſſeſſion of Terreeoboo and the other earees; that what we ſaw had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, to be made uſe of in ſome religious ceremony, and that he had ſent it as a proof of his innocence and attachment to us.

This afforded an opportunity of informing ourſelves whether they were cannibals, and we did not neglect it. They immediately ſhewed as much horror at the idea as any European would

have

have done; and aſked, very naturally, if that was the cuſtom amongſt us? They afterwards aſked us, with great earneſtneſs and apparent apprehenſion, "when the Orono would come again, and what he would do to them on his return?" The ſame enquiry was frequently made afterwards by others; and this idea agrees with the general tenor of their conduct towards him, which ſhewed that they conſidered him as a being of a ſuperior nature.

We preſſed our two friendly viſiters to remain on board till morning, but in vain. They told us that if this tranſaction ſhould come to the knowledge of the king or chiefs, it might be attended with the moſt fatal conſequences to their whole ſociety; in order to prevent which, they had been obliged to come off to us in the dark, and the ſame precaution would be neceſſary in returning on ſhore. They informed us farther, that the chiefs were eager to revenge the death of their countrymen; and particularly cautioned us againſt truſting Koah, who, they ſaid, was our mortal and implacable enemy, and deſired nothing more ardently than an opportunity of fighting us.

We learned from theſe men, that ſeventeen of their countrymen were killed in the firſt action at Kowrowa, of whom five were chiefs; and that Kaneena and his brother, our very particular friends, were unfortunately of that number. Eight, they ſaid, were killed at the obſervatory; three of whom were alſo of the firſt rank.

During the remainder of this night, we heard loud howling and lamentations. Early in the morning we received another viſit from Koah. I muſt confeſs, I was a little piqued to find that, notwithſtanding the moſt evident marks of trea-

chery in his conduct, and the poſitive teſtimony of our friends the prieſts, he ſhould ſtill be permitted to carry on the ſame farce, and to make us appear to be the dupes of his hypocriſy. Indeed our ſituation was become extremely awkward and unpromiſing; none of the purpoſes for which this pacific courſe of proceeding had been adopted having hitherto been in the leaſt forwarded by it.

This day a man had the audacity to come within muſket-ſhot, ahead of the ſhip; and, after flinging ſeveral ſtones at us, he waved Captain Cook's hat over his head, whilſt his countrymen on ſhore were exulting, and encouraging his boldneſs. Our people were all in a flame at this inſult, and, coming in a body on the quarter-deck, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with theſe repeated provocations; and requeſted me to obtain permiſſion for them, from Captain Clerke, to avail themſelves of the firſt fair occaſion of revenging the death of their commander. On my acquainting him with what was paſſing, he gave orders for ſome great guns to be fired at the natives on ſhore; and promiſed the crew, that if they ſhould meet with any moleſtation at the watering-place, the next day, they ſhould then be left at liberty to chaſtiſe them.

It is ſomewhat remarkable, that before we could bring our guns to bear, the iſlanders had ſuſpected our intentions, from the ſtir they ſaw in the ſhip, and had retired behind their houſes and walls. We were therefore obliged to fire in ſome meaſure at random; notwithſtanding which, our ſhot produced all the effects that could have been deſired. For ſoon after, we ſaw Koah paddling towards us, with extreme haſte, and on his arrival,

we

we learned that ſome people had been killed, and amongſt the reſt, Maiha-maiha, a principal chief, and a near relation to the king.

At night, the uſual precautions were taken for the ſecurity of the ſhips; and as ſoon as it was dark, our two friends, who had viſited us the night before, came off again. They aſſured us, that though the effect of our great guns this afternoon had terrified the chiefs exceedingly, they had by no means laid aſide their hoſtile intentions, and adviſed us to be on our guard.

The next morning, the boats of both ſhips were ſent aſhore for water; and the Diſcovery was warped cloſe to the beach, in order to cover that ſervice. We ſoon found that the intelligence which the prieſts had ſent us, was not without foundation; and that the natives were reſolved to take every opportunity of annoying us, when it could be done without much riſk.

Throughout all this group of iſlands, the villages, for the moſt part, are ſituated near the ſea; and the adjacent ground is incloſed with ſtone walls, about three feet high. They conſiſt of looſe ſtones, and the inhabitants are very dexterous in ſhifting them, with great quickneſs, to ſuch ſituations as the direction of the attack may require. In the ſides of the mountain, which hangs over the bay, they have alſo little holes or caves, of conſiderable depth, the entrance of which is ſecured by a fence of the ſame kind. From behind both theſe defences, the natives kept perpetually haraſſing our waterers with ſtones; nor could the ſmall force we had on ſhore, with the advantage of muſkets, compel them to retreat.

In this expoſed ſituation, our people were ſo taken up in attending to their own ſafety, that

they employed the whole forenoon in filling only one tun of water. As it was therefore impoſſible to perform this ſervice, till their aſſailants were driven to a greater diſtance, the Diſcovery was ordered to diſlodge them with her great guns; which being effected by a few diſcharges, the men landed without moleſtation. However, the natives ſoon after made their appearance again, in their uſual mode of attack; and it was now found abſolutely neceſſary to burn down ſome ſtraggling houſes near the wall, behind which they had taken ſhelter. In executing theſe orders, I am ſorry to add that our people were hurried into acts of unneceſſary cruelty and devaſtation.

Their orders were only to burn a few ſtraggling huts, which afforded ſhelter to the natives. We were therefore a good deal ſurpriſed to ſee the whole village on fire; and before a boat, that was ſent to ſtop the progreſs of the miſchief, could reach the ſhore, the houſes of our old and conſtant friends, the prieſts, were all in flames. I cannot enough lament the illneſs that confined me on board this day. The prieſts had always been under my protection.

Several of the natives were ſhot, in making their eſcape from the flames; and our people cut off the heads of two of them, and brought them on board. The fate of one poor iſlander was much lamented by us all. As he was coming to the well for water, he was ſhot at by one of the marines. The ball ſtruck his calibaſh, which he immediately threw from him and fled. He was purſued into one of the caves I have before deſcribed, and no lion could have defended his den with greater courage and fierceneſs; till, at laſt, after having kept two of our people at bay for

a conſider-

a conſiderable time, he expired covered with wounds.

Soon after the village was deſtroyed, we ſaw coming down the hill, a man, attended by fifteen or twenty boys, holding pieces of white cloth, green boughs, plantains, &c. in their hands. As they approached nearer, it was found to be our much eſteemed friend, Kaireekeea, who had fled on our firſt ſetting fire to the village, and had now returned, and deſired to be ſent on board the Reſolution.

When he arrived, we found him exceedingly grave and thoughtful. We endeavoured to make him underſtand the neceſſity we were under of ſetting fire to the village, by which his houſe, and thoſe of his brethren, were unintentionally conſumed. He expoſtulated a little with us on our want of friendſhip, and on our ingratitude. And, indeed, it was not till now that we learnt the whole extent of the injury we had done them. He told us that, relying on the promiſes I had made them, and the aſſurances they had afterwards received from the men, who had brought us the remains of Captain Cook, they had not removed their effects back into the country, with the reſt of the inhabitants, but had put every thing that was valuable of their own, as well as what they had collected from us, into a houſe cloſe to the morai, where they had the mortification to ſee it all ſet on fire by ourſelves.

On coming on board, he had ſeen the heads of his countrymen lying on the deck, at which he was exceedingly ſhocked, and deſired with great earneſtneſs that they might be thrown over-board. This requeſt Captain Clerke inſtantly ordered to be complied with.

In the evening, the watering party returned on board, having met with no farther interruption. We paſſed a gloomy night; the cries and lamentations we heard on ſhore being far more dreadful than ever. Our only conſolation was, the hope that we ſhould have no occaſion, in future, for a repetition of ſuch ſeverities.

The natives being at laſt convinced that it was not the want of ability to puniſh them, which had hitherto made us tolerate their provocations, deſiſted from giving us any farther moleſtation; and in the evening, a chief called Eappo, who had ſeldom viſited us, but whom we knew to be a man of the very firſt conſequence, came with preſents from Terreeoboo to ſue for peace. Theſe preſents were received, and he was diſmiſſed with the ſame anſwer which had before been given, that until the remains of Captain Cook ſhould be reſtored, no peace would be granted. We learned from this perſon, that the fleſh of all the bodies of our people, together with the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb bones of the marines had been divided amongſt the inferior chiefs; and that thoſe of Captain Cook had been diſpoſed of in the following manner: the head, to a great chief, called Kahoo-opeon; the hair to Maia-maia; and the legs, thighs, and arms to Terreeoboo.

Between ten and eleven o'clock, on the 20th, we ſaw a great number of people deſcending the hill, which is over the beach, in a kind of proceſſion, each man carrying a ſugar-cane or two on his ſhoulders, and bread-fruit, taro, and plantains in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers; who, when they came to the water-ſide, ſat down by a white flag, and began to beat their

drums,

drums, while thoſe who had followed them, advanced one by one; and having depoſited the preſents they had brought, retired in the ſame order. Soon after, Eappo came in ſight, in his long feathered cloak, bearing ſomething with great ſolemnity in his hands; and having placed himſelf on a rock, he made ſigns for a boat to be ſent him.

Captain Clerke, conjecturing that he had brought the bones of Captain Cook, which proved to be the fact, went himſelf in the pinnace to receive them; and ordered me to attend him in the cutter. When we arrived at the beach, Eappo came into the pinnace, and delivered to the captain the bones wrapped up in a large quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a ſpotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterward attended us to the Reſolution, but could not be prevailed upon to go on board; probably not chuſing, from a ſenſe of decency, to be preſent at the opening of the bundle. We found in it both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable ſcar on one of them, that divided the thumb from the fore-finger, the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the ſkull, but with the ſcalp ſeparated from it, and the bones that form the face wanting; the ſcalp with the hair upon it cut ſhort, and the ears adhering to it; the bones of both arms, with the ſkin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the thigh and leg bones joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were entire; and the whole bore evident marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the fleſh left upon them, and were cut in ſeveral places, and crammed with ſalt, apparently

rently with an intention of preſerving them. The ſcalp had a cut in the back part of it, but the ſkull was free from any fracture. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, Eappo told us, had been ſeized by different chiefs, and that Terreeoboo was uſing every means to recover them.

The next morning, Eappo, and the king's ſon, came on board, and brought with them the remaining bones of Captain Cook; the barrels of his gun, his ſhoes, and ſome other trifles that belonged to him. Eappo took great pains to convince us, that Terreeoboo, Maiha-maiha, and himſelf, were moſt heartily deſirous of peace; that they had given us the moſt convincing proof of it in their power; and that they had been prevented from giving it ſooner by the other chiefs, many of whom were ſtill our enemies. We found the cutter had been broken up.

Nothing now remained but to perform the laſt offices to our great and unfortunate commander. Eappo was diſmiſſed with orders to taboo all the bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones, having been put into a coffin, and the ſervice read over them, they were committed to the deep with the uſual military honours. What our feelings were on this occaſion, I leave the world to conceive; thoſe who were preſent know that it is not in my power to expreſs them.

During the forenoon of the 22d, not a canoe was ſeen paddling in the bay; the taboo, which Eappo had laid on it the day before, at our requeſt, not being yet taken off. At length Eappo came off to us. We aſſured him, that we were now entirely ſatisfied; and that as the Orono was buried, all remembrance of what had paſſed was

buried

buried with him. We afterward defired him to take off the taboo, and to make it known that the people might bring their proviſions as uſual. The ſhips were ſoon ſurrounded with canoes, and many of the chiefs came on board, expreſſing great ſorrow at what had happened, and their ſatisfaction at our reconciliation. Several of our friends, who did not viſit us, ſent preſents of large hogs, and other proviſions. Amongſt the reſt came the old treacherous Koah, but was refuſed admittance.

As we had now every thing ready for ſea, about eight o'clock this evening we diſmiſſed all the natives; Eappo, and the friendly Kaireekeea, took an affectionate leave of us. We immediately weighed, and ſtood out of the bay. The natives were collected on the ſhore in great numbers; and, as we paſſed along, received our laſt farewels with every mark of affection and good-will.

We got clear of the land about ten on the 22d, and hoiſting in the boats, ſtood to the northward.

After touching at Woahoo, where it was found watering would have been inconvenient, Captain Clerke determined, without farther loſs of time, to proceed to Atooi. On the 28th, we bore away for that iſland, which we were in ſight of by noon; and about ſun-ſet, were off its eaſtern extremity.

We had no ſooner anchored in our old ſtation, than ſeveral canoes came along-ſide of us; but we could obſerve, that they did not welcome us with the ſame cordiality in their manner, and ſatisfaction in their countenances, as when we were here before.

Our principal object here was to water the ſhips with the utmoſt expedition; and I was

ſent

ſent on ſhore early in the afternoon. We found a conſiderable number of people collected upon the beach, who received us at firſt with great kindneſs; but as ſoon as we had got the caſks on ſhore, began to be exceedingly troubleſome. It was with great difficulty I was able to form a circle, according to our uſual practice, for the convenience of our trading party; and had no ſooner done it, than I ſaw a man laying hold of the bayonet of one of the ſoldiers muſkets, and endeavouring with all his force, to wrench it out of his hand. This fray was occaſioned by the latter's having given the man a ſlight prick with his bayonet, in order to make him keep without the line.

I now perceived that our ſituation required great circumſpection and management; and accordingly gave the ſtricteſt orders that no one ſhould fire, nor have recourſe to any other act of violence, without poſitive commands. As ſoon as I had given theſe directions, I was called to the aſſiſtance of the watering party, where I found the natives equally inclined to miſchief. They had demanded from our people a large hatchet for every caſk of water; and this not being complied with, they would not ſuffer the ſailors to roll them down to the boats.

I had no ſooner joined them, than one of the natives advanced up to me with great inſolence, and made the ſame claim. I told him that as a friend, I was very willing to preſent him with a hatchet, but that I ſhould certainly carry off the water, without paying any thing for it; and I immediately ordered the pinnace men to proceed in their buſineſs, and called three marines from the traders to protect them.

Though

Though the natives continued for the moſt part, to pay great deference and reſpect to me, yet they did not ſuffer me to eſcape without contributing my ſhare to their ſtock of plunder. One of them came up to me with a familiar air, and with great management diverted my attention, whilſt another, wrenching the hanger, which I held careleſsly in my hand, from me, ran off with it like lightning.

It was in vain to think of repelling this inſolence by force; guarding therefore againſt its effects, in the beſt manner we were able, we had nothing to do but to ſubmit patiently to it. My apprehenſions were, however, a little alarmed, by the information I ſoon after received from the ſergeant of marines, who told me that, turning ſuddenly round, he ſaw a man behind me holding a dagger in the poſition of ſtriking. In caſe of a real attack, our whole force, however, advantageouſly diſpoſed, could have made but a poor reſiſtance. On the other hand, I thought it of ſome conſequence to ſhew the natives we were under no fears.

At laſt we got every thing into the boats, and only the gunner, a ſeaman of the boat's crew, and myſelf, remained on ſhore. As the pinnace lay beyond the ſurf, through which we were obliged to ſwim, I told them to make the beſt of their way to it, and that I ſhould follow them.

With this order I was ſurpriſed to find them both refuſe to comply, and the conſequence was a conteſt amongſt us who ſhould be the laſt on ſhore. It ſeems that ſome haſty words I had juſt before uſed to the ſailor, which he thought reflected on his courage, was the cauſe of this odd fancy in him; and the old gunner finding a point of ho-

nour

nour ſtarted, thought he could not well avoid taking a part in it. In this ridiculous ſituation we might have remained ſome time, had not our diſpute been ſoon ſettled by the ſtones that began to fly about us, and by the cries of the people from the boats to make haſte, as the natives were following us into the water with clubs and ſpears. I reached the ſide of the pinnace firſt, and finding the gunner was at ſome diſtance behind, and not yet entirely out of danger, I called out to the marines to fire one muſket. In the hurry of executing my orders they fired two; and when I got into the boat, I ſaw the natives running away, and one man with a woman ſitting by him, left behind on the beach. The man made ſeveral attempts to riſe, without being able; and it was with much regret, I perceived him to be wounded in the groin.

During our abſence, Captain Clerke had been under the greateſt anxiety for our ſafety. And theſe apprehenſions were conſiderably increaſed, from his having entirely miſtaken the drift of the converſation he had held with ſome natives who had been on board. The frequent mention of the name of Captain Cook, with other ſtrong and circumſtantial deſcriptions of death and deſtruction, made him conclude that the knowledge of the unfortunate events at Owhyhee had reached them, and that theſe were what they alluded to; whereas all they had in view was to make known to him the wars that had ariſen, in conſequence of the goats that Captain Cook had left at Oneeheow, and the ſlaughter of the poor goats themſelves, during the ſtruggle for the property of them.

The next morning, March 2, I was again ordered on ſhore with the watering party. The

riſk we had run the preceding day, determined Captain Clerke to ſend a conſiderable force from both ſhips for our guard, amounting in all to forty men under arms. This precaution, however, was now unneceſſary; for we found the beach left entirely to ourſelves, and the ground between the landing place and the lake tabooed with ſmall white flags. We concluded, from this appearance, that ſome of the chiefs had certainly viſited this quarter; and that, not being able to ſtay, they had kindly and conſiderately taken this ſtep for our greater ſecurity and convenience.

The next day we completed our watering without meeting with any material difficulty. On our return to the ſhips, we found that ſeveral chiefs had been on board, and had made excuſes for the behaviour of their countrymen, attributing their riotous conduct to the quarrels which ſubſiſted at that time amongſt the principal people of the iſland. The quarrel had ariſen about the goats we had left at Oneeheow the laſt year; the right of property in which was claimed by Toneoneo, on the pretence of that iſland's being a dependency of his.

On the 7th, we were ſurpriſed with a viſit from Toneoneo. When he heard the dowager princeſs was in the ſhip, it was with great difficulty we could prevail on him to come on board, not from any apprehenſion that he appeared to entertain of his ſafety, but from an unwillingneſs to ſee her. Their meeting was with ſulky and lowering looks on both ſides. He ſtaid but a ſhort time, and ſeemed much dejected; but we remarked, with ſome ſurpriſe, that the women, both at his coming and going away, proſtrated themſelves before him; and that he was treated

by all the natives on board with the reſpect uſually paid to thoſe of his rank. Indeed it muſt appear ſomewhat extraordinary, that a perſon, who was at this time in a ſtate of actual hoſtility with the oppoſite party, and was even prepared for another battle, ſhould truſt himſelf almoſt alone within the power of his enemies.

On the 8th, at nine in the morning, we weighed and ſailed toward Oneeheow; and at three in the afternoon, anchored in twenty fathoms water, nearly on the ſame ſpot as in the year 1778.

On the 12th, the weather being moderate, the maſter was ſent to the north-weſt ſide of the iſland, to look for a more convenient place for anchoring. He returned in the evening, having found a fine bay with good anchorage; alſo to the eaſtward were four ſmall wells of good water; the road to them level, and fit for rolling caſks.

Being now about to leave the Sandwich Iſlands, it may be proper to make a few remarks. This group conſiſts of eleven iſlands. They are called by the natives; 1. Owhyhee; 2. Mowee; 3. Ranai, or Ornai; 4. Morotinnee, or Morokinne; 5. Kahowrowee, or Tahoorowa; 6. Morotoi, or Morokoi; 7. Woahoo, or Oahoo; 8. Atooi, Atowi, or Towi, and ſometimes Kowi; 9. Neeheehow, or Oneeheow; 10. Oreehoua, or Reehoua; and, 11. Tahoora; and are all inhabited, excepting Morotinnee and Tahoora. Beſides the iſlands above enumerated, we were told by the Indians, that there is another called Modoopapapa, or Komodoopapapa, which is low and ſandy, and viſited only for the purpoſe of catching turtle and ſea-fowl.

They

They were named by Captain Cook the Sandwich Iſlands, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, under whoſe adminiſtration he had enriched geography with ſo many ſplendid and important diſcoveries.

The inhabitants of the Sandwich Iſlands are undoubtedly of the ſame race with thoſe of New Zealand, the Society and Friendly Iſlands, Eaſter Iſland, and the Marqueſas. This fact, which, extraordinary as it is, might be thought ſufficiently proved by the ſtriking ſimilarity of their manners and cuſtoms, and the general reſemblance of their perſons, is eſtabliſhed, beyond all controverſy, by the abſolute identity of their language.

From what continent they originally emigrated, and by what ſteps they have ſpread through ſo vaſt a ſpace, thoſe who are curious in diſquiſitions of this nature, may perhaps not find it very difficult to conjecture. It has been already obſerved, that they bear ſtrong marks of affinity to ſome of the Indian tribes that inhabit the Ladrones and Caroline Iſlands; and the ſame affinity may again be traced amongſt the Battas and the Malays. When theſe events happened, is not ſo eaſy to aſcertain; it was probably not very lately, as they are, extremely populous, and have no tradition of their own origin, but what is perfectly fabulous.

The natives of theſe iſlands are, in general, above the middle ſize, and well made. Their complexion is rather darker than that of the Otaheiteans, and they are not altogether ſo handſome a people. However, many of both ſexes had fine open countenances; and the women in particular, had good eyes and teeth, and a ſweetneſs and ſenſibility of look, which rendered them very en-

gaging. Their hair is of a browniſh black, and neither uniformly ſtraight, like that of the Indians of America, nor uniformly curling, as amongſt the African negroes, but varying in this reſpect like the hair of Europeans.

The ſame ſuperiority that is obſervable in the perſons of the earees, through all the other iſlands, is found alſo here. Thoſe whom we ſaw were, without exception, perfectly well formed; whereas the lower ſort, beſides their general inferiority, are ſubject to all the variety of make and figure that is ſeen in the populace of other countries.

They ſeem to have few native diſeaſes among them; but many of the earees ſuffer dreadfully from the immoderate uſe of the ava. There is ſomething very ſingular in the hiſtory of this pernicious drug. When Captain Cook firſt viſited the Society Iſlands, it was very little known among them. On his ſecond voyage, he found the uſe of it very prevalent at Ulietea; but it had ſtill gained very little ground at Otaheite. When we were laſt there, the dreadful havock it had made was beyond belief, inſomuch that the captain ſcarce knew many of his old acquaintances. At the Friendly Iſlands, it is alſo conſtantly drunk by the chiefs, but ſo much diluted with water, that it does not appear to produce any bad effects. At Atooi alſo it is uſed with great moderation, and the chiefs are, in conſequence, a much finer ſet of men there than in any of the neighbouring iſlands. Our good friends, Kaireekeea and old Kaoo, were perſuaded by us to refrain from it; and they recovered amazingly during the ſhort time we afterward remained in the iſland.

Not-

Notwithſtanding the irreparable loſs we ſuffered from the ſudden reſentment and violence of theſe people, yet, in juſtice to their general conduct, it muſt be acknowledged that they are of the moſt mild and affectionate diſpoſition; equally remote from the extreme levity and ficklenefs of the Otaheiteans, and the diſtant gravity and reſerve of the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands. They appear to live in the utmoſt harmony and friendſhip with one another. The women, who had children, were remarkable for their tender and conſtant attention to them; and the men would often lend their aſſiſtance in thoſe domeſtic offices, with a willingneſs that does credit to their feelings.

The inhabitants of theſe iſlands differ from thoſe of the Friendly Iſles, in ſuffering, almoſt univerſally, their beards to grow. There were indeed a few, amongſt whom was the old king, that cut it off entirely, and others that wore it only upon the upper lip. The ſame variety, in the manner of wearing the hair, is alſo obſervable here, as among the other iſlanders of the South Sea; beſides which, they have a faſhion, as far as we know, peculiar to themſelves. They cut it cloſe on each ſide of the head down to the ears.

Both ſexes wear necklaces made of ſtrings of ſmall variegated ſhells; and an ornament, in the form of the handle of a cup, about two inches long, and half an inch broad, made of wood, ſtone, or ivory, finely poiliſhed, which is hung about the neck by fine threads of twiſted hair, doubled ſometimes a hundred fold. Inſtead of this ornament, ſome of them wear on their breaſt

a ſmall human figure made of bone, ſuſpended in the ſame manner.

The cuſtom of tatooing the body, they have in common with the reſt of the natives of the South Sea Iſlands; but it is only at New Zealand and the Sandwich Iſlands, that they tatoo the face. They have a ſingular cuſtom amongſt them, the meaning of which we could never learn—that of tatooing the tip of the tongues of the females.

The dreſs of the men generally conſiſts only of a piece of thick cloth, called the maro, about ten or twelve inches broad, which they paſs between the legs, and tie round the waiſt. This is the common dreſs of all ranks of people. Their mats, ſome of which are beautifully manufactured, are of various ſizes, but moſtly about five feet long and four broad. Theſe they throw over their ſhoulders, and bring forward before; but they are ſeldom uſed, except in time of war, for which purpoſe they ſeem better adapted than for ordinary uſe, being of a thick and cumberſome texture, and capable of breaking the blow of a ſtone, or any blunt weapon.

The common dreſs of the women bears a cloſe reſemblance to that of the men. They wrap round the waiſt a piece of cloth that reaches half way down the thighs, and ſometimes, in the cool of the evening, they appeared with looſe pieces of fine cloth thrown over their ſhoulders, like the women of Otaheite. The pau is another dreſs very frequently worn by the younger part of the ſex. It is made of the thinneſt and fineſt ſort of clo h,, wrapt ſeveral times round the waiſt, and deſcending to the leg, ſo as to have the appearance of a full ſhort petticoat.

The

The way of ſpending their time appears to be very ſimple, and to admit of little variety. They riſe with the ſun, and, after enjoying the cool of the evening, retire to reſt a few hours after ſunſet. The making of canoes and mats forms the occupations of the earees; the women are employed in manufacturing cloth, and the towtows are principally engaged in the plantations and fiſhing.

Their muſic is of a rude kind, having neither flutes nor reeds, nor inſtruments of any other ſort that we ſaw, except drums of various ſizes. But their ſongs, which they ſung in parts, and accompany with a gentle motion of the arms, in the ſame manner as the Friendly Iſlanders, had a very pleaſing effect.

The people of theſe iſlands are manifeſtly divided into three claſſes. The firſt are the earees, or chiefs, of each diſtrict; one of whom is ſuperior to the reſt, and is called at Owhyhee eareetaboo, and earee-moee. By the firſt of theſe words they expreſs his abſolute authority; and and by the latter, all are obliged to proſtrate themſelves (or put themſelves to ſleep, as the word ſignifies) in his preſence. The ſecond claſs are thoſe who appear to enjoy a right of property, without authority. The third are the towtows, or ſervants, who have neither rank nor property.

The chiefs exerciſe their power over one another in the moſt haughty and oppreſſive manner. Of this I ſhall give two inſtances. A chief of the lower order had behaved with great civility to one of our officers; and in return, I carried him on board, and introduced him to Captain Cook, who invited him to dine with us. While we were at table, Pareea, who was chief of a ſu-

perior

perior order, entered, whoſe face but too plainly manifeſted his indignation at ſeeing our gueſt in ſo honourable a ſituation. He immediately ſeized him by the hair of the head, and was proceeding to drag him out of the cabin, when the captain interfered; and, after a deal of altercation, all the indulgence we could obtain, without coming to a quarrel with Pareea, was, that our gueſt ſhould be ſuffered to remain, being ſeated upon the floor, whilſt Pareea filled his place at the table. At another time, when Terreeoboo firſt came on board the Reſolution, Maiha-maiha, who attended him, finding Pareea on deck, turned him out of the ſhip in the moſt ignominious manner.

The religion of theſe people reſembles, in moſt of its principal features, that of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. Their morais, their whattas, their idols, their ſacrifices, and their ſacred ſongs, all of which they have in common with each other, are convincing proofs, that their religious notions are derived from the ſame ſource.

It has been mentioned, that the title of Orono, with all its honours, was given to Captain Cook; and it is alſo certain that they regarded us, generally, as a race of people ſuperior to themſelves; and uſed often to ſay, that the great Eatooa dwelled in our country.

Human ſacrifices are more frequent here, according to the account of the natives themſelves, than in any other iſlands we viſited. Theſe horrid rites are not only had recourſe to upon the commencement of war, and preceding great battles, and other ſignal enterpriſes; but the death of any conſiderable chief calls for a ſacrifice of one or more towtows, according to his rank;

and

we were told that men were deſtined to ſuffer on the death of Terreeoboo.

To this claſs of their cuſtoms may alſo be referred that of knocking out their fore-teeth, as a propitiatory ſacrifice to the Eatooa, to avert any danger or miſchief to which they might be expoſed.

On the 15th of March, at ſeven in the morning, we weighed anchor, and paſſing to the north of Tahoora, ſtood on to the ſouth-weſt. On the 23d, the wind, which had been moderate for ſome time, freſhened and increaſed to a ſtrong gale, which ſplit ſome of our old ſails, and made the running rigging very frequently give way. This gale laſted twelve hours; it then became more moderate, and continued ſo till the 25th at noon, when we entirely loſt it, and had only a very light air.

On the 30th, the winds and unſettled ſtate of the weather induced Captain Clerke to alter his plan, and at ſix in the evening, we began to ſteer north-weſt, which we continued till the 6th of April, when we loſt the trade wind.

The ſtanding orders, eſtabliſhed by Captain Cook, of airing the bedding, placing fires between decks, waſhing them with vinegar, and ſmoking them with gunpowder, were obſerved without any intermiſſion. For ſome time paſt, even the operation of mending the ſailors old jackets had riſen into a duty both of difficulty and importance. It may be neceſſary to inform thoſe who are unacquainted with the habits of ſeamen, that they are ſo accuſtomed in ſhips of war to be directed in the care of themſelves by their officers, that they loſe the very idea of fore-ſight, and contract the thoughtleſſneſs of infants. I am ſure that if our people had been left to their own diſ-

cretion

cretion alone, we ſhould have had the whole crew naked, before the voyage had been half finiſhed. It was natural to expect that their experience, during our voyage to the north, laſt year, would have made them ſenſible of the neceſſity of paying ſome attention to theſe matters; but if ſuch reflections ever occurred to them, their impreſſion was ſo tranſitory, that upon our return to the tropical climates, their fur jackets, and the reſt of their cold country clothes, were kicked about the decks as things of no value; though it was generally known, in both ſhips, that we were to make another voyage towards the pole. They were of courſe picked up by the officers; and being put into caſks, reſtored about this time to the owners.

On the 12th, the wind came gradually round to the eaſt, and increaſed to a ſtrong gale. Ever ſince we left the Sandwich Iſlands, we had been incommoded by a leak, which made twelve inches of water every hour; but as we had always been able to keep it under with the hand-pumps, it gave us no great uneaſineſs, till the 13th, when we were greatly alarmed by a ſudden inundation that deluged the whole ſpace between decks. The water, which had lodged in the coal-hole, not finding a ſufficient vent into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and in a moment ſet every thing afloat. Our ſituation was indeed exceedingly diſtreſſing; nor did we immediately ſee any means of relieving ourſelves. As ſoon as a paſſage was made for it, the greateſt part of the water emptied itſelf into the well, and enabled us to get out the reſt with buckets. But the leak was now ſo much increaſed, that we were obliged to keep one half of the people conſtantly

pumping

pumping and baleing till the noon of the 15th. Our men bore, with great cheerfulneſs, this exceſſive fatigue, which was much increaſed by their having no dry place to ſleep in; and on this account we began to ſerve their full allowance of grog.

As we were now approaching the place where a great extent of land is ſaid to have been ſeen by De Gama, we were glad of the opportunity which the courſe we were ſteering gave, of contributing to remove the doubts, if any ſhould be ſtill entertained, relative to this pretended diſcovery. After ſtanding off and on, the whole of this day, without ſeeing any thing of the land, we again ſteered to the northward, not thinking it worth our while to loſe time in ſearch of an object, the opinion of whoſe exiſtence had been already pretty generally exploded.

The ſudden alteration from the ſultry heat which we felt the beginning of this month, to the extreme cold which we now experienced, was attended with great inconvenience to us.

On the 21ſt, we ſaw a whale and a land-bird; and in the afternoon, the water looking muddy, we ſounded, but got no ground with a hundred and forty fathoms of line. During the three preceding days we ſaw large flocks of wild-fowl, of a ſpecies reſembling ducks. This is uſually conſidered as a proof of the vicinity of land; but we had no other ſigns of it ſince the 16th, in which time we had run upwards of a hundred and fifty leagues.

On the 22d, the cold was exceedingly ſevere, and the ropes were ſo frozen, that it was with difficulty we could force them through the blocks.

On the 23d, at ſix in the morning, the land appeared in mountains covered with ſnow, and

extending from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt, a high conical rock, bearing ſouth-weſt, at three or four leagues diſtance. We had no ſooner taken this imperfect view, than we were covered with a thick fog. As ſoon as the weather cleared up, we ſtood in to make a nearer view of the land, and a more diſmal and dreary proſpect I never beheld. The coaſt appears ſtraight and uniform, having no inlets or bays; the ground from the ſhore, riſes in hills of a moderate elevation, behind which are ranges of mountains, whoſe ſummits were loſt in the clouds. The whole ſcene was entirely covered with ſnow, except the ſides of ſome of the cliffs, which roſe too abruptly from the ſea for the ſnow to lie upon them.

The wind continued blowing very ſtrong from the north-eaſt, with thick hazy weather and ſleet, from the 24th till the 28th. The ſhip appeared to be a complete maſs of ice; the ſhrouds were ſo incruſted with it, as to meaſure in circumference more than double their uſual ſize; and, in ſhort, the experience of the oldeſt ſeaman among us had never met with any thing like the continued ſhowers of ſleet, and the extreme cold which we now encountered.

On the 28th, in the morning, the weather at laſt cleared, and the wind fell to a light breeze from the ſame quarter as before. We had a fine warm day, and as we now began to expect a thaw, the men were employed in breaking the ice from off the rigging, maſts, and ſails, in order to prevent its falling on our heads. About three in the afternoon, a fair wind ſprung up from the ſouthward, with which we ſtood in for Awatſka Bay.

Having paſſed the mouth of the bay, which is about four miles long, we opened a large circular

baſon

baſon of twenty-five miles in circumference; and at half paſt four, came to an anchor in ſix fathoms water. We examined every corner of the bay with our glaſſes, in ſearch of the town of St. Peter and St. Paul; which, according to the accounts given us at Oonalaſhka, we had conceived to be a place of ſome ſtrength and conſideration. At length we diſcovered, on a narrow point of the land, to the north north-eaſt, a few miſerable log-houſes and ſome conical huts, raiſed on poles, amounting in all to about thirty; which, from their ſituation, notwithſtanding all the reſpect we wiſhed to entertain for a Ruſſian oſtrog, we were under the neceſſity of concluding to be Petropaulowſka. However, in juſtice to the generous and hoſpitable treatment we found here, I ſhall beg leave to anticipate the reader's curioſity, by aſſuring him that our diſappointment proved to be more of a laughable than a ſerious nature. For in this wretched extremity of the earth, barricaded with ice, and covered with ſummer ſnow, in a poor miſerable port, we met with feelings of humanity, joined to a greatneſs of mind, which would have done honour to any nation or climate.

During the night much ice drifted by us with the tide, and at day-light I was ſent with the boats to examine the bay, and deliver the letters we had brought from Oonalaſhka to the Ruſſian commander.

As we approached, we obſerved a few men hurrying backward and forward, and preſently after a ſledge drawn by dogs, with one of the inhabitants in it, came down to the ſea-ſide oppoſite to us. Whilſt we were gazing at this unuſual ſight, and admiring the great civility of this ſtranger, which we imagined had brought him

to our assistance, the man, after viewing us for some time very attentively, turned short round, and went off with great speed towards the ostrog. We were not less chagrined than disappointed at this abrupt departure, as we began to find our journey over the ice attended not only with great difficulty, but even with danger.

When we were within a quarter of a mile of the ostrog, we perceived a body of armed men marching towards us, consisting of about thirty soldiers, headed by a decent looking person, with a cane in his hand. He halted within a few yards of us, and drew up his men in a martial and good order. I delivered to him Ismyloff's letters, and endeavoured to make him understand, as well as I could (though I afterwards found in vain,) that we were English, and had brought them papers from Oonalashka. After having examined us attentively, he began to conduct us towards the village in great silence and solemnity, frequently halting his men to form them in different manners, and make them perform several parts of their manual exercise.

At length we arrived at the house of the commanding officer of the party, into which we were ushered; and after no small stir in giving orders, and disposing of the military without doors, our host made his appearance, accompanied by another person, whom we understood to be the secretary of the port. One of Ismyloff's letters was now opened, and the other sent off by a special messenger, to Bolcheretsk, a town on the west side of the peninsula of Kamtschatka, where the Russian commander of this province usually resides.

The officer, in whose house we were at present entertained, was a sergeant, and the commander

of

of the oſtrog. Nothing could exceed the kindneſs and hoſpitality of his behaviour, after he had recovered from the alarm occaſioned by our arrival. We found the houſe inſufferably hot, but exceedingly neat and clean. After I had changed my wet clothes, which the ſergeant's civility enabled me to do, by furniſhing me with a complete ſuit of his own, we were invited to ſit down to dinner, which I have no doubt was the beſt he could procure; and, conſidering the ſhortneſs of time he had to provide it, was managed with ſome ingenuity. The ſergeant's wife brought in ſeveral diſhes herſelf, and was not permitted to ſit down at table. Having finiſhed our repaſt, during which it is hardly neceſſary to remark that our converſation was confined to a few bows, and other ſigns of mutual reſpect, we endeavoured to open to our hoſt the cauſe and objects of our viſit to this port. As Iſmyloff had probably written to them on the ſame ſubject in the letters we had before delivered, he appeared very readily to conceive our meaning; but as there was unfortunately no one in the place that could talk any other language except Ruſſian or Kamtſchadale, we found the utmoſt difficulty in comprehending the information he meant to convey to us. After ſome time ſpent in theſe endeavours to underſtand one another, we conceived the ſum of the intelligence we had procured to be, that though no ſupply, either of proviſions or naval ſtores were to be had at this place, yet that theſe articles were in great plenty at Bolcheretſk. That the commander would moſt probably be very willing to give us what we wanted; but that, till the ſergeant had received orders from him, neither

ther he nor his people, nor the natives, could even venture to go on board the ſhip.

It was now time for us to take our leave; and a ſledge, drawn by five dogs, with a driver, was immediately provided for each of our party. The ſailors were highly delighted with this mode of conveyance; and what diverted them ſtill more was, that the two boat-hooks had alſo a ſledge appropriated to themſelves. Theſe ſledges are ſo light, and their conſtruction ſo well adapted to the purpoſes for which they are intended, that they went with great expedition, and perfect ſafety over the ice, which it would have been impoſſible for us, with all our caution, to have paſſed on foot.

On our return, we found the boats towing the ſhip towards the village; and at ſeven we got cloſe to the ice, and moored. Next morning the carpenters were ſet to work to ſtop the leak, which had given us ſo much trouble during our laſt run. Several of our gentlemen paid their viſits to the ſergeant, by whom they were received with great civility; and Captain Clerke ſent him two bottles of rum, which he underſtood would be the moſt acceptable preſent he could make him, and received in return ſome fine fowls of the grouſe kind, and twenty trouts.

The following morning, on our obſerving two ſledges drive into the village, Captain Clerke ſent me on ſhore, to enquire whether any meſſage was arrived from the commander of Kamtſchatka, which, according to the ſergeant's account, might now be expected, in conſequence of the intelligence that had been ſent of our arrival. Bolcheretſk, by the uſual route, is about one hun-

dred

Richter del et sc

Manner of Travell[illegible] in Kamtschatka.

dred and thirty-five Engliſh miles from St. Peter and St. Paul's. Our diſpatches were ſent off in a ſledge drawn by dogs, on the 29th, about noon. And the anſwer arrived, as we afterwards found, early this morning; ſo that they were only a little more than three days and a half in performing a journey of two hundred and ſeventy miles.

The return of the commander's anſwer was, however, concealed from us for the preſent; and I was told, on my arrival at the ſergeant's, that we ſhould hear from him the next day.

About ten o'clock next forenoon, we ſaw ſeveral ſledges driving down to the edge of the ice, and ſent a boat to conduct the perſons who were in them on board. One of theſe was a Ruſſian merchant from Bolcheretſk, named Fedoſitſch, and the other a German, called Port, who had brought a letter from Major Behm, the commander of Kamtſchatka, to Captain Clerke. When they got to the edge of the ice, and ſaw diſtinctly the ſize of the ſhips, which lay within about two hundred yards from them, they appeared to be exceedingly alarmed; and before they would venture to embark, deſired two of our boat's crew might be left on ſhore as hoſtages for their ſafety. We afterwards found that Iſmyloff, in his letter to the commander, had miſrepreſented us, for what reaſons we could not conceive, as two ſmall trading boats; and that the ſergeant, who had only ſeen the ſhips at a diſtance, had not, in his diſpatches, rectified the miſtake.

When they arrived on board, we ſtill found, from their cautious and timorous behaviour, that they were under ſome unaccountable apprehenſions; and an uncommon degree of ſatisfaction was viſible in their countenances, on the German's

finding a perſon amongſt us, with whom he could converſe. This was Mr. Webber, who ſpoke that language exceedingly well. Mr. Port being introduced to Captain Clerke, delivered to him the commander's letter, which was written in German, inviting him and his officers to Bolcheretſk. Mr. Port, at the ſame time acquainted him, that the major had conceived a very wrong idea of the ſize of the ſhips, and of the ſervice we were engaged in; Iſmyloff, in his letter, having repreſented us as two ſmall Engliſh packet boats, and cautioned him to be on his guard; inſinuating, that he ſuſpected us to be no better than pirates.

Being now enabled to converſe with the Ruſſians, by the aid of our interpreter, our firſt enquiries were directed to the means of procuring a ſupply of freſh proviſions and naval ſtores; from the want of which we had been for ſome time in great diſtreſs. On enquiry, it appeared that the whole ſtock of live cattle, which the country about the bay could furniſh, amounted only to two heifers; and theſe the ſergeant very readily promiſed to procure us. Our applications were next made to the merchant, but we found the terms, upon which he offered to ſerve us, ſo exorbitant, that Captain Clerke thought it neceſſary to ſend an officer to viſit the commander at Bolcheretſk, and to enquire into the price of ſtores at that place.

Captain Clerke having thought proper to fix on me for this ſervice, I received orders, together with Mr. Webber, who was to accompany me as an interpreter, to be ready to ſet out the next day.

Captain Gore was now added to our party, and we were attended by Meſſrs. Port and Fedoſitſch, with

with two Coſſacks, and were provided by our conductors with warm furred clothing; a precaution which we ſoon found very neceſſary, as it began to ſnow briſkly juſt after we ſet out.

On the morning of the ſecond day, we were met by the Toion, or Chief of Karatchin, who had been apprized of our coming, and had provided canoes that were lighter, and better contrived for navigating the higher parts of the river Awatſka. We now went on very rapidly, the toion's people being both ſtout and freſh, and remarkable for their expertneſs in this buſineſs. At ten we got to the oſtrog, the ſeat of his command, where we were received at the water-ſide by the Kamtſchadale men and women, and ſome Ruſſian ſervants belonging to Fedoſitſch, who were employed in making canoes. They were all dreſſed out in their beſt clothes.

This oſtrog was pleaſantly ſituated by the ſide of the river. We were conducted to the dwelling of the toion, who was a plain decent man, born of a Ruſſian woman by a Kamtſchadale father. His houſe, like all the reſt in this country, was divided into two apartments. A long narrow table, with a bench round it, was all the furniture we ſaw in the outer; and the houſehold ſtuff of the inner, which was the kitchen, was not leſs ſimple and ſcanty. But the kind attention of our hoſt, and the hearty welcome we received, more than compenſated for the poverty of his lodgings.

Whilſt we were at dinner in this miſerable hut, the gueſts of a people, with whoſe exiſtence we had before been ſcarcely acquainted, and at the extremity of the habitable globe, a ſolitary half-worn pewter ſpoon, whoſe ſhape was familiar

liar to us, attracted our attention; and on examination we found it ſtamped on the back with the word London. I cannot paſs over this circumſtance in ſilence, out of gratitude for the many pleaſant thoughts, the anxious hopes, and tender remembrances it excited in us. Thoſe who have experienced the effects, that long abſence and extreme diſtance from their native country produce on the mind, will readily conceive the pleaſure ſuch trifling incidents can give.

We were now to quit the river, and perform the next part of our journey on ſledges.

After walking about the village, which contained nothing remarkable, we returned to ſupper, and afterwards took a ſhort repoſe; but we were ſoon awakened by the melancholy howlings of the dogs, which continued all the time our baggage was laſhing upon the ſledges; but as ſoon as they were yoked, and we were all prepared to ſet out, this changed into a light cheerful yelping, which entirely ceaſed the inſtant they marched off. Theſe dogs are in ſhape ſomewhat like the Pomeranian breed, but conſiderably larger.

As we did not chuſe to truſt to our own ſkill, we had each of us a man to drive and guide the ſledge, which, from the ſtate the roads were now in, proved a very laborious buſineſs. I had a very good-humoured Coſſack to attend me, who was, however, ſo very unſkilful in his buſineſs, that we were overturned almoſt every minute, to the great entertainment of the reſt of the company. Our party conſiſted, in all, of ten ſledges. That in which Captain Gore was carried, was made of two laſhed together, and abundantly provided with furs and bear ſkins; it had ten dogs, yoked

four

four abreaſt; as had alſo ſome of thoſe that were heavy laden with baggage.

When we had proceeded about four miles, it began to rain; which, added to the darkneſs of the night, threw us all into confuſion. It was, at laſt, agreed that we ſhould remain where we were till day-light; and, accordingly, wrapping ourſelves up in our furs, we waited patiently for morning. About three o'clock we were called on to ſet out, our guides being apprehenſive that if we waited longer, we might be ſtopped by the thaw, and neither be able to proceed nor to return. After encountering many difficulties, which were principally occaſioned by the bad condition of the road, at two in the afternoon we got ſafe to an oſtrog, called Natcheekin.

We were received here in the ſame hoſpitable manner as at Karatchin, and in the afternoon we went to viſit a remarkable hot ſpring which is near this village. We ſaw, at ſome diſtance, the ſteam riſing from it, as from a boiling caldron; and as we approached, perceived the air had a ſtrong ſulphureous ſmell. The main ſpring forms a baſon of about three feet in diameter; beſides which, there are a number of leſſer ſprings, of the ſame degree of heat, in the adjacent ground; ſo that the whole ſpot, to the extent of near an acre, was ſo hot, that we could not ſtand two minutes in the ſame place. The water flowing from theſe ſprings is collected in a ſmall bathing pond, and afterward forms a little rivulet; which, at the diſtance of about a hundred and fifty yards, falls into the river. The bath, they told us, had wrought great cures in ſeveral diſorders, ſuch as rheumatiſms, ſwelled and contracted joints, and ſcorbutic ulcers.

The

The next morning we embarked on the Bolchoireka in canoes. The country on each ſide was very romantic, but unvaried; the river running between mountains of the moſt craggy and barren aſpect, where there was nothing to diverſify the ſcene, but now and then the ſight of a bear, and the flights of wild-fowl.

At day-light, on the 12th, we found we had got clear of the mountains, and were entering a low, extenſive plain, covered with ſhrubby trees. About nine in the forenoon we arrived at an oſtrog, called Opatchin, which is computed to be fifty miles from Natcheekin, and is nearly of the ſame ſize as Karatchin. We found here a ſergeant with four Ruſſian ſoldiers, who had been two days waiting for our arrival; and who immediately diſpatched a light boat to Bolcheretſk with intelligence of our approach. The remainder of our paſſage was performed with great facility and expedition, the river growing more rapid as we deſcended, and leſs obſtructed by ſhoals.

As we approached the capital, we were ſorry to obſerve, from an appearance of much ſtir and buſtle, that we were to be received in form. Decent clothes had been, for ſome time, a ſcarce commodity amongſt us; and our travelling dreſſes were made up of a burleſque mixture of European, Indian, and Kamtſchadale faſhions. The manner in which we were received by the commander was the moſt engaging that could be conceived, and increaſed my mortification at finding, that he had almoſt entirely forgotten the French language; ſo that the ſatisfaction of converſing with him was wholly con-

fined

fined to Mr. Webber, who ſpoke the German, his native tongue.

In company with Major Behm was Captain Shmaleff, the ſecond in command, and another officer, with the whole body of the merchants of the place. They conducted us to the commander's houſe, where we were received by his lady with great civility, and found tea and other refreſhments prepared for us.

About ſeven o'clock, the commander, conceiving we might be fatigued with our journey, and deſirous of taking ſome repoſe, begged he might conduct us to our lodgings. In our way we paſſed by two guard-houſes, where the men were turned out under arms, in compliment to Captain Gore; and were afterward brought to a very neat and decent houſe, which the major gave us to underſtand was to be our reſidence during our ſtay. Two ſentinels were poſted at the door; and, in a houſe adjoining, there was a ſergeant's guard. Here the major took his leave, with a promiſe to ſee us next day.

Early in the morning, we received the compliments of the commander, of Captain Shmaleff, and of the principal inhabitants of the town, who all honoured us with viſits ſoon after. The two firſt having ſent for Port, after we were gone to reſt, and enquired of him, what articles we ſeemed to be moſt in want of on board the ſhips; we found them prepared to inſiſt on our ſharing with the garriſon under their command, in what little ſtock of proviſions they had remaining.

We agreed to accept the liberality of theſe hoſpitable ſtrangers, with the beſt grace we could; but on condition, that we might be made

acquainted

acquainted with the price of the articles we were to be ſupplied with; and that Captain Clerke ſhould give bills to the amount upon the Victualling Office in London. This the major poſitively refuſed; and whenever it was afterward urged, ſtopped us ſhort, by telling us, he was certaiu, that he could not oblige his miſtreſs more, than in giving every aſſiſtance in his power to her good friends and allies the Engliſh.

In return for ſuch ſingular generoſity, we had little to beſtow but our admiration and our thanks. Fortunately, however, Captain Clerke had ſent by me a ſet of prints and maps, belonging to the laſt voyage of Captain Cook, which he deſired me to preſent in his name to the commander; who, being an enthuſiaſt in every thing relating to diſcoveries, received it with a ſatisfaction which ſhewed that, though a trifle, nothing could have been more acceptable. Captain Clerke had likewiſe entruſted me with a diſcretionary power, of ſhewing him a chart of the diſcoveries made in the preſent voyage; and as I judged, that a perſon in his ſituation, and of his turn of mind, would be exceedingly gratified by a communication of this ſort, I made no ſcruple to repoſe in him a confidence, of which his whole conduct ſhewed him to be deſerving.

I had the pleaſure to find, that he felt this compliment as I hoped he would, and was much ſtruck at ſeeing in one view, the whole of that coaſt, as well on the ſide of Aſia as on that of America, of which his countrymen had been ſo many years employed in acquiring a partial and imperfect knowledge.

We dined this day at the commander's, who, ſtudious on every occaſion to gratify our curioſi-

ty,

ty, had, beſides a number of diſhes dreſſed in our own way, prepared a great variety of others, after the Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale manner. The afternoon was employed in taking a view of the town, and of the adjacent country. Bolcheretſk is ſituated in a low ſwampy plain, that extends to the ſea of Okotſk, being about forty miles long, and of a conſiderable breadth. It lies on the north ſide of the Bolchoi-reka, (or great river). Below the town, the river is from ſix to eight feet deep, and about a quarter of a mile broad. There is no corn, of any ſpecies, cultivated in this part of the country; and Major Behm informed me, that his was the only garden that had yet been planted. I ſaw about twenty or thirty cows; and the major had ſix ſtout horſes. Theſe, and their dogs, are the only tame animals they poſſeſs.

The houſes in Bolcheretſk are all of one faſhion, being built of logs and thatched. That of the commander is much larger than the reſt, conſiſting of three rooms of a conſiderable ſize, neatly papered, and which might have been reckoned handſome, if the talc, with which the windows were covered, had not given them a poor and diſagreeable appearance. The inhabitants, taken all together, amount to between five and ſix hundred.

The next morning we applied privately to the merchant Fedoſitſch, to purchaſe ſome tobacco for the ſailors, who had been upward of a twelvemonth without this favourite commodity. However, this, like all our other tranſactions of the ſame kind, came immediately to the major's knowledge; and we were ſoon after ſurpriſed to find, in our houſe, four bags of tobacco, weigh-

ing upward of a hundred pounds each, which he begged might be preſented in the name of himſelf, and the garriſon under his command, to our ſailors. At the ſame time, they had ſent us twenty loaves of fine ſugar, and as many pounds of tea, being articles they underſtood we were in great want of, which they begged to be indulged in preſenting to the officers. Along with theſe, Madame Behm had alſo ſent a preſent for Captain Clerke, conſiſting of freſh butter, honey, figs, rice, and ſome other little things of the ſame kind, attended with many wiſhes, that in his infirm ſtate of health, they might be of ſervice to him. It was in vain we tried to oppoſe this profuſion of bounty, which I was really anxious to reſtrain, being convinced that they were giving away, not a ſhare, but almoſt the whole ſtock of the garriſon.

We dined this day with Captain Shmaleff, and in the afternoon, in order to vary our amuſements, he treated us with an exhibition of the Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale dancing. No deſcription can convey an adequate idea of this rude and uncouth entertainment. The figure of the Ruſſian dance was much like thoſe of our hornpipes, and was performed either ſingle, or by two or four perſons at a time. Their ſteps were ſhort and quick, with the feet ſcarce raiſed from the ground. But if the Ruſſian dance was ridiculous, the Kamtſchadale was the moſt whimſical idea that ever entered into any people's heads. It is intended to repreſent the awkward and clumſy geſtures of the bear. The body was always bowed, and the knees bent, whilſt the arms were uſed in imitating the tricks and attitudes of that animal.

As

As our journey to Bolcheretſk had taken up more time than we expected, and were told that our return might prove ſtill more difficult and tedious, we were under the neceſſity of acquainting the commander this evening, with our intention of ſetting out the next day. We were moſt agreeably ſurpriſed, when the major told us, that if we could ſtay one day longer, he would accompany us; as he ſhould feel great pleaſure in returning with us to St. Peter and St. Paul's, that he might himſelf be a witneſs of every thing done for us, that it was in their power to do.

We afterwards dined with the commander, who, in order to let us ſee as much of the manners of the inhabitants, and of the cuſtoms of the country, as our time would permit, invited the whole of the better ſort of people in the village to his houſe this evening. All the women appeared very ſplendidly dreſſed, after the Kamtſchadale faſhion. The whole was like ſome enchanted ſcene in the midſt of the wildeſt and moſt dreary country in the world. Our entertainment again conſiſted of dancing and ſinging.

The next morning, being fixed for our departure, we retired early to our lodgings, where the firſt things we ſaw were three travelling dreſſes, made after the faſhion of the country, which the major had provided for us. Indeed, what with his liberal preſents, and the kindneſs of Captain Shmaleff, and many other individuals, who all begged to throw in their mite, together with the ample ſtock of proviſions he had ſent us for our journey, we had amaſſed no inconſiderable load of baggage.

During the courſe of our journey, we were much pleaſed with the great good-will with which the toions, and their Kamtſchadales, afforded us their aſſiſtance at the different oſtrogs through which we paſſed; and I could not but obſerve the pleaſure that appeared in their countenances, on ſeeing the major, and their ſtrong expreſſions of ſorrow, on hearing he was ſo ſoon going to leave them.

We had diſpatched a meſſenger to Captain Clerke, from Bolcheretſk, with an account of our reception, and of the major's intention of returning with us; at the ſame time, apprizing him of the day he might probably expect to ſee us. The major was much ſtruck at the robuſt and healthy appearance of the boats crews, and ſtill more at ſeeing moſt of them without any other covering than a ſhirt and trowſers, although at the very moment it actually ſnowed.

When Major Behm arrived, he was ſaluted with thirteen guns, and received with every other mark of diſtinction that it was in our power to pay him.

After viſiting Captain Clerke, and taking a view of both the ſhips, he returned to dinner on board the Reſolution; and, in the afternoon, the various curioſities we had collected in the courſe of our voyage were ſhewn him, and a complete aſſortment of every article, preſented to him by the captain. On this occaſion I muſt not paſs over an inſtance of great generoſity and gratitude in the ſailors of both ſhips; who, when they were told of the handſome preſent of tobacco that was made them by the major, deſired, entirely of their own accord, that their grog might be ſtopped, and their allowance of ſpirits preſented, on

their

their part, to the garriſon of Bolcheretſk. We could not but admire ſo extraordinary a ſacrifice; and that they might not ſuffer by it, Captain Clerke and the reſt of the officers ſubſtituted, in the room of the very ſmall quantity the major could be prevailed on to accept, the ſame quantity of rum. This, with a dozen or two of Cape wine, for Madame Behm, and ſuch other little preſents as were in our power to beſtow, were accepted in the moſt obliging manner.

Major Behm having reſigned the command of Kamtſchatka, intended to have ſet out in a ſhort time for Peterſburg; and he now offered to charge himſelf with any diſpatches we might truſt to his care. This was an opportunity not to be neglected; and Captain Clerke, being perſuaded that the whole account of our diſcoveries might ſafely be truſted to a perſon who had given ſuch ſtriking proofs both of his public and private virtues, and conſidering that we had a very hazardous part of the voyage ſtill to undertake, determined to ſend by him, the whole of the journal of our late commander, with that part of his own which completed the period from Captain Cook's death, till our arrival at Kamtſchatka; together with a chart of all our diſcoveries, to be delivered to our ambaſſador at the Ruſſian court.

During the three following days, the major was entertained alternately in the two ſhips, in the beſt manner we were able. On the 25th he took his leave, and was ſaluted with thirteen guns; and the ſailors, at their own deſire, gave him three cheers.

Short as our acquaintance had been with Major Behm, his noble and diſintereſted conduct,

had inſpired us with the higheſt reſpect and eſteem for him. The intrinſic value of the private preſents we received from him, excluſive of the ſtores, muſt have amounted to upwards of two hundred pounds. But this generoſity was far exceeded by the delicacy with which all his favours were conferred. "The ſervice in which you are employed," he would often ſay, "is for the general advantage of mankind, and therefore gives you a right, not merely to the offices of humanity, but to the privileges of citizens, in whatever country you may be thrown. I am ſure I am acting agreeably to the wiſhes of my miſtreſs, in affording you all the relief in our power; and I cannot forget either her character, or my own honour, ſo much as to barter for the performance of a duty."

During the time that the ſhips lay in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, Captain Clerke's health continued daily to decline, notwithſtanding the ſalutary change of diet which the country of Kamtſchatka afforded him.

On the 1ſt of June, we got on board nine thouſand pounds weight of rye flour, with which we were ſupplied from the ſtores of St. Peter and St. Paul; and the Diſcovery had a proportional quantity. The men were immediately put on full allowance of bread, which they had not been indulged in ſince our leaving the Cape of Good Hope.

June 4th, we had freſh breezes and hard rain, which diſappointed us in our deſign of dreſſing the ſhips, and obliged us to content ourſelves with firing twenty-one guns, in honour of the day, and celebrating it in other reſpects in the beſt manner we were able.

On

On the 6th, twenty head of cattle, of a moderate ſize, were ſent us by the commander's orders from the Verchnei oſtrog, which is near a hundred miles from this place in a direct line. They arrived in good condition. The eight following days were employed in making ready for ſea.

Before day-light, on the 15th, we were ſurpriſed with a rumbling noiſe, reſembling diſtant hollow thunder; and when the day broke, we found the decks and ſides of the ſhips covered with a fine duſt like emery, near an inch thick. The air at the ſame time continued loaded and darkened with this ſubſtance; and, toward the volcano mountain, ſituated to the north of the harbour, it was ſo thick and black, that we could not diſtinguiſh the body of the hill. Along with the cinders fell ſeveral ſmall ſtones, which had undergone no change from the action of fire. In the evening we had dreadful thunder and lightning, which, with the darkneſs of the atmoſphere, and the ſulphureous ſmell of the air, produced altogether, a moſt awful and terrifying effect. We were at this time about eight leagues from the foot of the mountain.

The aſpect of the country was now very different from what it had been on our firſt arrival. The ſnow had diſappeared, and the ſides of the hills were covered with a beautiful verdure.

As it was Captain Clerke's intention to keep as much in ſight of the coaſt of Kamtſchatka as the weather would permit, the volcano was ſtill ſeen throwing up immenſe volumes of ſmoke; and we had no ſoundings with one hundred and fifty fathoms, at the diſtance of four leagues from the ſhore.

At noon, on the 6th of July, we paſſed a conſiderable number of large maſſes of ice; and, obſerving that it ſtill adhered, in ſeveral places, to the ſhore on the continent of Aſia, we were not much ſurpriſed to fall in, at three in the afternoon, with an extenſive body of it, ſtretching away to the weſtward. This ſight gave great diſcouragement to our hopes of advancing much farther northward this year than we had the preceding.

Having little wind in the afternoon, we hoiſted out the boats, in purſuit of the ſea-horſes, which were in great numbers upon the detached pieces of ice; but they ſoon returned without ſucceſs; theſe animals being exceedingly ſhy, and before they could come within gun-ſhot, always making their retreat into the water.

We had ſailed, by the 9th, near forty leagues to the weſtward, along the edge of the ice, without ſeeing any opening, or a clear ſea to the northward beyond it, and had therefore no proſpect of advancing farther north for the preſent.

On the 10th we hoiſted out the boats again, and ſent them in purſuit of the ſea-horſes, which were in great numbers on the pieces of ice that ſurrounded us. Our people were more ſucceſsful than they had been before, returning with three large ones and a young one, beſides killing and wounding ſeveral others. The gentlemen who went on this party were witneſſes of ſeveral remarkable inſtances of parental affection in thoſe animals. On the approach of our boats toward the ice, they all took their cubs under their fins, and endeavoured to eſcape with them into the ſea.

At eight in the evening, a breeze ſprung up to the eaſtward, with which we ſtill continued our courſe to the ſouthward, and at twelve fell in with numerous large bodies of ice. We endeavoured to puſh through them with an eaſy ſail, for fear of damaging the ſhip; and, having got a little farther to the ſouthward, nothing was to be ſeen but one compact field of ice, ſtretching to the ſouth-weſt, ſouth-eaſt, and north-eaſt, as far as the eye could reach.

We continued to ſteer northward, with a moderate ſoutherly breeze and fair weather, till the 13th at ten in the forenoon, when we again found ourſelves cloſe in with a ſolid field of ice, to which we could ſee no limits from the maſthead. This at once daſhed all our hopes of penetrating farther.

Captain Clerke now reſolved to make one more, and final attempt on the American coaſt, for Baffin's or Hudſon's Bay, ſince we had been able to advance the fartheſt on this ſide laſt year. Accordingly, we kept working the remaining part of the day to the windward, with a freſh eaſterly breeze.

On the 16th, in the forenoon, we found ourſelves embayed; the ice having taken a ſudden turn to the ſouth-eaſt, and in one compact body ſurrounding us on all ſides, except on the ſouth quarter. We therefore hauled our wind to the ſouthward, being at this time in twenty-ſix fathoms water; and, as we ſuppoſed, about twenty-five leagues from the coaſt of America.

On the 18th, in the morning, we paſſed ſome ſmall logs of drift-wood, and ſaw abundance of ſea-parrots, and the ſmall ice-birds, and likewiſe a number of whales. About nine in the even-

ing

ing a white bear was ſeen ſwimming cloſe by the Diſcovery; it afterwards made to the ice, on which were alſo two others.

On the 19th, at one in the morning, the weather clearing up, we were ſo completely embayed, that there was no opening left, but to the ſouth; to which quarter we accordingly directed our courſe, returning through a remarkably ſmooth water. We were never able to penetrate farther north than at this time, and this was five leagues ſhort of the point to which we advanced laſt ſeaſon.

In the afternoon we ſaw two white bears in the water, to which we immediately gave chace in the jolly boat, and had the good fortune to kill them both. The larger, which probably was the dam of the younger, being ſhot firſt, the other would not quit it, though it might eaſily have eſcaped on the ice while the men were reloading, but remained ſwimming about, till, after being fired upon ſeveral times, it was ſhot dead. The weight of the largeſt was four hundred and thirty-ſix pounds.

Theſe animals afforded us a few excellent meals of freſh meat. The fleſh had indeed a ſtrong fiſhy taſte, but was in every reſpect infinitely ſuperior to that of the ſea-horſe; which, nevertheleſs, our people were again perſuaded, without much difficulty, to prefer to their ſalted proviſions,

At eight in the morning of the 21ſt, the wind freſhening, and the fog clearing away, we ſaw the American coaſt to the ſouth-eaſt, at the diſtance of eight or ten leagues, and hauled in for it; but were ſtopped again by the ice, and oblig-

ed

ed to bear away to the weſtward along the edge of it.

Thus a connected ſolid field of ice, rendering every effort we could make to a nearer approach to the land, fruitleſs, and joining, as we judged, to it, we took a farewel of a north-eaſt paſſage to Old England. I ſhall beg leave to give, in Captain Clerke's own words, the reaſons of this his final determination, as well as of his future plans; and this the rather, as it is the laſt tranſaction his health permitted him to write down.

" It is now impoſſible to proceed the leaſt farther to the northward upon this coaſt (America); and it is equally as improbable that this amazing maſs of ice ſhould be diſſolved by the few remaining ſummer-weeks which will terminate this ſeaſon; but it will continue, it is to be believed, as it now is, an inſurmountable barrier to every attempt we can poſſibly make. I therefore think it the beſt ſtep that can be taken, for the good of the ſervice, to trace the ſea over to the Aſiatic coaſt, and to try if I can find any opening that will admit me farther north; if not, to ſee what more is to be done upon that coaſt, where I hope, yet cannot much flatter myſelf, to meet with better ſucceſs; for the ſea is now ſo choked with ice, that a paſſage, I fear, is totally out of the queſtion."

Captain Clerke having determined, for the reaſons juſt aſſigned, to give up all farther attempts on the coaſt of America, and to make his laſt efforts in ſearch of a paſſage on the coaſt of the oppoſite continent, we continued, during the afternoon of the 21ſt of July, to ſteer to the weſt north-weſt, through much looſe ice.

In

In the morning of the 23d, the clear water, in which we continued to ſtand to and fro, did not exceed a mile and a half, and was every inſtant leſſening. At length, after uſing our utmoſt endeavours to clear the looſe ice, we were driven to the neceſſity of forcing a paſſage to the ſouthward, which, at half paſt ſeven, we accompliſhed, but not without ſubjecting the ſhip to ſome very ſevere ſhocks. The Diſcovery was leſs ſucceſsful. For, at eleven, when they had nigh got clear out, ſhe became ſo entangled by ſeveral large pieces, that her way was ſtopped; and immediately dropping to leeward, ſhe fell, broadſide foremoſt, on the edge of a conſiderable body of ice; and having at the ſame time an open ſea to windward, the ſurf cauſed her to ſtrike violently upon it. This maſs, at length, either ſo far broke, or moved, as to ſet them at liberty to make another trial to eſcape; but, unfortunately, before the ſhip gathered way enough to be under command, ſhe again fell to leeward on another fragment; and the ſwell making it unſafe to lie to windward, and finding no chance of getting clear, they puſhed into a ſmall opening, furled their ſails, and made faſt with ice-hooks.

In this dangerous ſituation, we ſaw them at noon, about three miles from us, a freſh gale driving more ice to the north-weſt, and increaſing the body that lay between us. To add to the gloomy apprehenſions which began to force themſelves on us, at half paſt four in the afternoon, the weather becoming thick and hazy, we loſt ſight of the Diſcovery. Our apprehenſions for her ſafety did not ceaſe till nine, when we heard her guns in anſwer to ours; and ſoon after,

being hailed by her, were informed that, upon the change of wind, the ice began to ſeparate; and that, ſetting all their ſails, they forced a paſſage through it, though with conſiderable damage.

On the 24th, we had freſh breezes from ſouth-weſt, with hazy weather, and kept running to the ſouth-eaſt till eleven in the forenoon, when a large body of looſe ice, to which we could ſee no end, again obſtructed our courſe.

As it was now neceſſary to come to ſome determination, with reſpect to the courſe we were next to ſteer, Captain Clerke ſent a boat with the carpenters on board the Diſcovery, to enquire into the particulars of the damage ſhe had ſuſtained. They returned in the evening with the report, that the damages they had received, would require three weeks to repair.

Thus, finding a farther advance to the northward, as well as a nearer approach to either continent, obſtructed by a ſea blocked up with ice, we judged it both injurious to the ſervice, as well as fruitleſs, with reſpect to the deſign of our voyage, to make any farther attempts toward a paſſage. This, added to the repreſentations of Captain Gore, determined Captain Clerke to ſail for Awatſka Bay, to repair our damages there; and, before the winter ſhould ſet in, to explore the coaſt of Japan.

I will not endeavour to conceal the joy that brightened the countenances of every individual, as ſoon as Captain Clerke's reſolutions were made known. We were all heartily ſick of a navigation full of danger, and in which the utmoſt perſeverance had not been repaid with the ſmalleſt probability of ſucceſs. We therefore turned

our faces home, after an abſence of three years, with a delight and ſatisfaction which, notwithſtanding the tedious voyage we had ſtill to make, and the immenſe diſtance we had to run, were as freely entertained, and perhaps as fully enjoyed, as if we had been already in ſight of the Land's End.

Captain Clerke was now no longer able to get out of his bed; he therefore deſired that the officers would receive their orders from me, and directed that we ſhould proceed with all ſpeed to Awatſka Bay. The wind continuing weſterly, we ſtood on to the ſouth till early on the morning of the 19th, when, after a few hours rain, it blew from the eaſtward and freſhened to a ſtrong gale. We accordingly made the moſt of it while it laſted, by ſtanding to the weſtward, under all the ſail we could carry. On the 21ſt, at half paſt five in the morning, we ſaw a very high peaked mountain, on the coaſt of Kamtſchatka, called Cheepoonſkoi Mountain, twenty-five or thirty leagues diſtant.

On the 22d of Auguſt 1779, at nine o'clock in the morning, departed this life, Captain Charles Clerke, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He died of a conſumption, which had evidently commenced before he left England, and of which he had lingered during the whole voyage. His very gradual decay had long made him a melancholy object to his friends; yet the equanimity with which he bore it, the conſtant flow of good ſpirits, which continued to the laſt hour, and a cheerful reſignation to his fate, afforded them ſome conſolation. It was impoſſible not to feel a more than common degree of compaſſion for a perſon, whoſe whole life had been a continued

ſcene

ſcene of thoſe difficulties and hardſhips, to which a ſeaman's occupation is ſubject, and under which he at laſt ſunk. He was brought up to the navy from his earlieſt youth, and had been in ſeveral actions during the war which began in 1756; particularly in that between the Bellona and Courageux, where, being ſtationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the maſt, but was taken up without having received any hurt. He was midſhipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Commodore Byron, on her firſt voyage round the world, and afterwards ſerved on the American ſtation. In 1768, he made his ſecond voyage round the world in the Endeavour, as maſter's mate, and, by the promotion which took place during the expedition, he returned a lieutenant. His third voyage round the world was in the Reſolution, of which he was appointed the ſecond lieutenant; and ſoon after his return, in 1775, he was promoted to the rank of maſter and commander. When the preſent expedition was ordered to be fitted out, he was appointed to the Diſcovery, to accompany Captain Cook, and, by the death of the latter, ſucceeded, as has been already mentioned, to the chief command.

It would be doing his memory extreme injuſtice, not to ſay, that, during the ſhort time the expedition was under his direction, he was moſt zealous and anxious for its ſucceſs. His health, about the time the principal command devolved upon him, began to decline very rapidly, and was every way unequal to encounter the rigours of a high northern climate. But the vigour and activity of his mind had, in no ſhape, ſuffered by the decay of his body: and though he knew that, by delaying his return to a warmer

climate, he was giving up the only chance that remained for his recovery, yet careful and jealous to the laſt degree, that a regard to his own ſituation ſhould never bias his judgment to the prejudice of the ſervice, he perſevered in the ſearch of a paſſage, till it was the opinion of every officer in both ſhips, that it was impracticable, and that any farther attempts would not only be fruitleſs, but dangerous.

Next day we anchored in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, when our old friend, the ſergeant, who was ſtill the commander of the place, came on board with a preſent of berries, intended for our poor deceaſed captain. He was exceedingly affected when we told him of his death, and ſhewed him the coffin that contained his body. He ſignified his intention of ſending off an expreſs to the commander of Bolcheretſk, to acquaint him with our arrival, and Captain Gore availed himſelf of that occaſion of writing him a letter, in which he requeſted that ſixteen head of black cattle might be ſent with all poſſible expedition.

In the morning of the 25th, Captain Gore made out the new commiſſions, in conſequence of Captain Clerke's death; appointing himſelf to the command of the Reſolution, and me to the command of the Diſcovery; and Mr. Lanyan, maſter's mate of the Reſolution, who had ſerved in that capacity on board the Adventure in the former voyage, was promoted to the vacant lieutenancy. Theſe promotions produced ſeveral other arrangements of courſe. The artificers were now buſily employed in the neceſſary repairs.

On Sunday afternoon, Auguſt the 29th, we paid the laſt offices to Captain Clerke. The offi-

cers

cers and men of both ſhips walked in proceſſion to the grave, whilſt the ſhips fired minute guns; and the ſervice being ended, the marines fired three volleys. He was interred under a tree, which ſtands on a riſing ground, in the valley to the north ſide of the harbour, where the hoſpital and ſtore-houſes are ſituated. All the Ruſſians in the garriſon were aſſembled, and attended with great reſpect and ſolemnity.

The next day an enſign arrived from Bolcheretſk, with a letter from the commander to Captain Gore; by which we underſtood, that orders had been given about the cattle; and that they might be expected here in a few days; and moreover, that Captain Shmaleff, the preſent commander, would himſelf pay us a viſit immediately on the arrival of a ſloop which was daily expected from Okotſk.

On the 15th we had finiſhed the repairs, got on board all our wood and water, and were ready to put to ſea at a day's notice; but the cattle were not yet arrived, and as freſh proviſions were the moſt important article of our wants, we could not think of taking our departure without them. We therefore thought this a favourable opportunity of taking ſome amuſement on ſhore. Accordingly Captain Gore propoſed a party of bear-hunting, which we all very readily came into; but we had but indifferent ſport.

The 22d, being the anniverſary of his majeſty's coronation, twenty-one guns were fired, and the handſomeſt feaſt our ſituation would allow of, was prepared in honour of the day. As we were ſitting down to dinner, the arrival of Captain Shmaleff was announced. He acquainted us, that our not having received the ſixteen head of

black cattle, we had desired might be sent down, was owing to the very heavy rains at Verchnei, which had prevented their setting out. Specimens of all our curiosities were presented to him; and Captain Gore added to them a gold watch and a fowling-piece. Next morning he took his leave.

The next day I set on foot another hunting party, and put myself under the direction of the clerk of the parish, who was a celebrated bear-hunter. We arrived by sun-set at the side of one of the larger lakes. The next step was to conceal ourselves as much as possible; and this we were able to do very effectually among some long grass and brush-wood, that grew close to the water's edge. We had not lain long in ambush, before we had the pleasure to hear the growlings of bears in different parts round about us; and our expectations were soon gratified by the sight of one of them in the water, which seemed to be swimming directly to the place where we lay hid. The moon at this time gave a considerable light; and when the animal had advanced about fifteen yards, three of us fired at it pretty nearly at the same time. The beast immediately turned short on one side, and made a noise which could not properly be called roaring, nor growling, nor yelling, but was a mixture of all three, and horrible beyond description. It retreated to some thick bushes, at a little distance, and continued to make the same terrible noise; and though the Kamtschadales were persuaded it was mortally wounded, they thought it most advisable not to rouse it again for the present. It was at this time past nine o'clock, and the night threatening a change of weather, we returned home, and deferred the gratification of our curiosity

riosity till morning, when we found the bear dead in the place to which it had been watched. It proved to be a female, and beyond the common size.

The Kamtschadales very thankfully acknowledge their obligations to the bears for what little advancement they had hitherto made, either in the sciences or polite arts. They confess that they owe to them all their skill, both in physic and surgery; that, by remarking with what herbs these animals rub the wounds they have received, and what they have recourse to, when sick and languid, they have become acquainted with most of the simples in use among them, either in the way of internal medicine, or external application; they acknowledge the bears likewise for their dancing masters. Indeed the evidence of one's senses puts this out of dispute; for the bear-dance of the Kamtschadales is an exact counterpart of every attitude and gesture peculiar to this animal, through its various functions; and this is the foundation and groundwork of all their other dances, and what they value themselves most upon.

No occurrence worth mentioning took place till the 30th, when Captain Gore went to Paratounca, to put up, in the church there, an escutcheon, prepared by Mr. Webber, with an inscription upon it, setting forth Captain Clerke's age and rank, and the object of the expedition in which he was engaged at the time of his decease. We also affixed to the tree, under which he was buried, a board, with an inscription upon it to the same effect.

On the 2d of October, both ships warped out of the harbour, the day before the cattle arrived

from

from Verchnei; and that the men might receive the full benefit of this much longed-for ſupply, by conſuming it freſh, Captain Gore came to a determination of ſtaying five or ſix days longer.

At four in the afternoon of the 9th, we unmoored; and now took our leave of this place.

Kamtſchatka is the name of a peninſula ſituated on the eaſtern coaſt of Aſia, running nearly north and ſouth.

It is bounded on the north by the country of the Koriacks; to the ſouth and eaſt by the North Pacific Ocean; and to the weſt by the Sea of Okotſk, A chain of high mountains ſtretches the whole length of the country, from north to ſouth, dividing it nearly into two equal parts, whence a great number of rivers take their riſe, and empty themſelves on each ſide into the Pacific Ocean and the Sea of Okotſk.

If I may judge of the ſoil, from what I ſaw of its vegetable productions, I ſhould not heſitate in pronouncing it barren in the extreme. The whole bore a more ſtriking reſemblance to Newfoundland, than to any other part of the world I had ever ſeen.

It is natural to ſuppoſe that the ſeverity of the climate muſt be in due proportion to the general ſterility of the ſoil, of which it is probably the cauſe. The firſt time we ſaw this country, was in the beginning of May, 1779, when the whole face of it was covered with ſnow, from ſix to eight feet deep. On our return, the 24th of Auguſt, the foliage of the trees, and all ſorts of vegetation, ſeemed to be in the utmoſt ſtate of perfection; but, at the beginning of October, the tops of the hills were again covered with new fallen ſnow.

The

The real riches of this country muſt always conſiſt in the number of wild animals it produces; and no labour can ever be turned to ſo good an account, as what is employed upon their furrieries. Their animals are the common fox; the ſtoat, or ermine; the zebiline or ſable; the iſatis, or arctic fox; the varying hare; the mountain rat, or earleſs marmot; the weaſel; the glutton, or wolverene; the argali, or wild ſheep; rein-deer; bears; wolves; dogs.

The Ruſſian government, eſtabliſhed over this country, is mild and equitable, conſidered as a military one, in a very high degree. The natives are permitted to chuſe their own magiſtrates from among themſelves, in the way, and with the ſame powers, they had ever been uſed. One of theſe, under the title of toion, preſides over each oſtrog; is the referree in all differences; impoſes fines, and inflicts puniſhments for all crimes and miſdemeanours; referring to the governor of Kamtſchatka, ſuch only as he does not chuſe, from their intricacy or heinouſneſs, to decide upon himſelf. The toion has likewiſe the appointment of a civil officer, called a corporal, who aſſiſts him in the execution of his office, and in his abſence acts as his deputy.

By an edict of the preſent empreſs, no crime whatſoever can be puniſhed with death. But, we were informed, that in caſes of murder, (of which there are very few) the puniſhment of the knout is adminiſtered with ſuch ſeverity, that the offender for the moſt part dies under it.

Our inſtructions from the Board of Admiralty, having left a diſcretionary power with the commanding officer of the expedition, in caſe of failure in the ſearch of a paſſage from the Pacific in-

to the Atlantic Ocean, to return to England by whatever route he ſhould think beſt for the farther improvement of geography, Captain Gore demanded of the principal officers their ſentiments, in writing, reſpecting the manner in which theſe orders might moſt effectually be obeyed. The reſult of our opinions, which he had the ſatisfaction to find unanimous, and entirely coinciding with his own, that the condition of the ſhips, of the ſails and cordage, made it unſafe to attempt, at ſo advanced a ſeaſon of the year, to navigate the ſea between Japan and Aſia, which would otherwiſe have afforded the largeſt field for diſcovery; that it was therefore adviſable to keep to the eaſtward of that iſland, and in our way thither to run along the Kuriles, and examine more particularly the iſlands that lie neareſt the northern coaſt of Japan, which are repreſented as of a conſiderable ſize, and independent of the Ruſſian and Japaneſe governments. Should we be ſo fortunate as to find in theſe any ſafe and commodious harbours, we conceived they might be of importance, either as places of ſhelter for any future navigators, who may be employed in exploring theſe ſeas, or as the means of opening a commercial intercourſe among the neighbouring dominions of the two empires. Our next object was to ſurvey the coaſt of the Japaneſe Iſlands, and afterwards to make the coaſt of China, as far to the northward as we were able, and run along it to Macao.

This plan being adopted, I received orders from Captain Gore, in caſe of ſeparation, to proceed immediately to Macao; and, at ſix o'clock in the evening of the 9th of October, having cleared the entrance of Awatſka Bay, we ſteered to the ſouth-

eaſt,

eaſt, with the wind north-weſt and by weſt. At midnight we had a dead calm, which continued till noon of the 10th. Being in ſoundings of ſixty and ſeventy fathoms water, we employed our time very profitably in catching cod, which were exceedingly fine and plentiful; in the afternoon a breeze ſprung up from the weſt, with which we ſtood along the coaſt to the ſouthward.

After experiencing very blowing weather and adverſe winds, which put us out of the courſe originally intended, at day-break of the 26th, we had the pleaſure of deſcrying high land to the weſtward, which proved to be Japan.

We ſtood on till nine, when we were within two leagues of the land, and ſaw the ſmoke of ſeveral towns or villages, and many houſes near the ſhore, in pleaſant and cultivated ſituations.

On the 29th, at nine o'clock, the wind ſhifting to the ſouthward, and the ſky lowering, we tacked and ſtood off to the eaſt, and ſoon after ſaw a veſſel cloſe in with the land, ſtanding along the ſhore to the northward; and another in the offing, coming down on us before the wind. Objects of any kind, belonging to a country ſo famous, and yet ſo little known, it will be eaſily conceived, muſt have excited a general curioſity, and accordingly every ſoul on board was upon deck, in an inſtant, to gaze at them. As the veſſel to windward approached us, ſhe hauled farther off ſhore; upon which, fearing that we ſhould alarm them by the appearance of a purſuit, we brought the ſhips to, and ſhe paſſed ahead of us, at the diſtance of about half a mile. It would have been eaſy for us to have ſpoken with them; but perceiving by their manœuvres, that they were much frightened, Captain Gore was not willing

to augment their terrors; and, thinking that we ſhould have many better opportunities of communication with this people, ſuffered them to go off without interruption.

At noon the wind freſhened, and brought with it a good deal of rain; by three it had increaſed ſo much, that the ſea ran as high as any one on board ever remembered to have ſeen it.

At eight in the evening, the gale ſhifted to the weſt, without abating the leaſt in violence, and, by raiſing a ſudden ſwell, in a contrary direction to that which prevailed before, occaſioned the ſhips to ſtrain and labour exceedingly. During the ſtorm, ſeveral of the ſails were ſplit on board the Reſolution.

From the 29th of October to the 5th of November, we continued our courſe to the ſouth-eaſt, having very unſettled weather, attended with much lightning and rain. On both days we paſſed great quantities of pumice ſtone, ſeveral pieces of which we took up, and found to weigh from one ounce to three pounds. We conjectured that theſe ſtones had been thrown into the ſea by eruptions of various dates, as many of them were covered with barnacles, and others quite bare.

On the 15th, we ſaw three iſlands, and bore away for the ſouth point of the largeſt, upon which we obſerved a high barren hill, flattiſh at the top, and when ſeen from the weſt ſouth-weſt, preſents an evident volcanic crater. The earth, rock, or ſand, for it was not eaſy to diſtinguiſh of which its ſurface is compoſed, exhibited various colours, and a conſiderable part we conjectured to be ſulphur, both from its appearance to the eye, and the ſtrong ſulphureous ſmell which we perceived, as we approached the point. Some of

the

the officers on board the Reſolution, which paſſed nearer the land, thought they ſaw ſteams riſing from the top of the hill. From theſe circumſtances, Captain Gore gave it the name of Sulphur Iſland.

Captain Gore now directed his courſe to the weſt ſouth-weſt, for the Baſhee Iſlands, hoping to procure at them ſuch a ſupply of refreſhments as would help to ſhorten his ſtay at Macao; but unfortunately he overſhot them, from an inaccuracy in the chart to which he truſted.

In the forenoon of the 29th, we paſſed ſeveral Chineſe fiſhing boats, who eyed us with great indifference. Being now nearly in the latitude of the Lema Iſlands, we bore away weſt by north, and, after running twenty-two miles, ſaw one of them nine or ten leagues to the weſtward.

In the morning of the 30th, we ran along the Lema Iſles. At nine o'clock, a Chineſe boat, which had been before with the Reſolution, came along-ſide, and wanted to put on board us a pilot, which, however, we declined, as it was our buſineſs to follow our conſort.

We rejoiced to ſee the Reſolution ſoon after fire a gun, and hoiſt her colours as a ſignal for a pilot. On repeating the ſignal, we ſaw an excellent race between four Chineſe boats; and Captain Gore, having engaged with the man, who arrived firſt, to carry the ſhip to the Typa for thirty dollars, ſent me word that as we could eaſily follow, that expence might be ſaved to us. Soon after, a ſecond pilot, getting on board the Reſolution, inſiſted on conducting the ſhip, and, without farther ceremony, laid hold of the wheel, and began to order the ſails to be trimmed. This occaſioned a violent diſpute, which at laſt was

compromiſed by agreeing to go ſhares in the money.

In obedience to the inſtructions given to Captain Cook by the Board of Admiralty, it now became neceſſary to demand of the officers and men their journals, and what other papers they might have in their poſſeſſion, relating to the hiſtory of our voyage. The execution of theſe orders ſeemed to require ſome delicacy as well as firmneſs. As ſoon, therefore, as I had aſſembled the ſhip's company on deck, I acquainted them with the orders we had received, and the reaſons which I thought ought to induce them to yield a ready obedience. At the ſame time I told them, that any papers, which they were deſirous not to have ſent to the Admiralty, ſhould be ſealed up in their preſence, and kept in my own cuſtody, till the intentions of the Board, with regard to the publication of the Hiſtory of the Voyage, were fulfilled; after which, they ſhould faithfully be reſtored back to them.

It is with the greateſt ſatisfaction I can relate, that my propoſals met with the approbation and the cheerful compliance both of the officers and men; and I am perſuaded that every ſcrap of paper, containing any tranſactions relating to the voyage, were given up. Indeed, it is doing bare juſtice to the ſeamen of this ſhip to declare, that they were the moſt obedient, and the beſt diſpoſed men I ever knew, though almoſt all of them were very young, and had never before ſerved in a ſhip of war.

We kept working to windward till ſix in the evening, when we came to anchor on the 1ſt of December.

In the evening of the 2d, Captain Gore ſent me on ſhore to viſit the Portugueſe Governor, and to requeſt his aſſiſtance in procuring refreſhments for our crews. At the ſame time, I took a liſt of the naval ſtores, of which both veſſels were greatly in want, with an intention of proceeding immediately to Canton, and applying to the ſervants of the Eaſt India Company, who were at that time reſident there. On my arrival at the citadel, the fort-major informed me that the governor was ſick, and not able to ſee company; on my acquainting the major with my deſire of proceeding immediately to Canton, he told me that they could not venture to furniſh me with a boat, till leave was obtained from the hoppo, or officer of the cuſtoms; and that the application for this purpoſe muſt be made to the Chineſe government at Canton.

The mortification I felt at meeting with this unexpected delay, could only be equalled by the extreme impatience with which we had ſo long waited for an opportunity of receiving intelligence from Europe. It often happens, that in the eager purſuit of an object, we overlook the eaſieſt and moſt obvious means of attaining it. This was actually my caſe at preſent, for I was returning under great dejection to the ſhip, when the Portugueſe officer who attended me, aſked me, if I did not mean to viſit the Engliſh gentlemen at Macao. I need not add with what tranſport I received the information this queſtion conveyed to me; nor the anxious hopes and fears, the conflict between curioſity and apprehenſion, which paſſed in my mind, as we walked toward the houſe of one of our countrymen.

In this ſtate of agitation, it was not ſurpriſing, that our reception, though no way deficient in civility or kindneſs, ſhould appear cold and formal. In our enquiries, as far as they related to objects of private concern, we met, as was indeed to be expected, with little or no ſatisfaction; but the events of a public nature, which had happened ſince our departure, now, for the firſt time, burſt all at once upon us, overwhelmed every other feeling, and left us, for ſome time, almoſt without the power of reflection.

On the 9th, Captain Gore received an anſwer from the Committee of the Engliſh ſupercargoes at Canton, in which they aſſured him that their beſt endeavours ſhould be uſed to procure the ſupplies we ſtood in need of, as expeditiouſly as poſſible; and that a paſſport ſhould be ſent for one of his officers.

The following day, an Engliſh merchant, from one of our ſettlements in the Eaſt Indies, applied to Captain Gore for the aſſiſtance of a few hands to navigate a veſſel, he had purchaſed at Macao, up to Canton. Captain Gore judging this a good opportunity for me to proceed to that place, gave orders that I ſhould take along with me my ſecond lieutenant, the lieutenant of marines, and ten ſeamen. Though this was not preciſely the mode in which I could have wiſhed to viſit Canton, yet as it was very uncertain when the paſſport might arrive, and my preſence might contribute materially to the expediting of our ſupplies, I did not heſitate to put myſelf on board.

I reached Canton, on the 18th, a little after it was dark, and landed at the Engliſh factory, where, though my arrival was very unexpected, I was received with every mark of attention and

civility.

civility. Wiſhing to make my ſtay here as ſhort as poſſible, I requeſted the gentlemen to procure boats for me the next day to convey the ſtores; but I was ſoon informed, that a buſineſs of that kind was not to be tranſacted ſo rapidly in this country; that many forms were to be complied with; and, in ſhort, that patience was an indiſpenſable virtue in China.

I waited ſeveral days for the event of our application, without underſtanding that the matter was at all advanced toward a concluſion. Whilſt I was doubting what meaſures to purſue, the commander of a country ſhip brought me a letter from Captain Gore, in which he acquainted me that he had engaged him to bring us down from Canton, and to deliver the ſtores we had procured, at his own riſk in the Typa.

As Canton was likely to be the moſt advantageous market for furs, I was deſired by Captain Gore to carry with me about twenty ſea-otters ſkins, chiefly the property of our deceaſed commanders, and to diſpoſe of them at the beſt price I could procure; a commiſſion, which gave me an opportunity of becoming a little acquainted with the genius of the Chineſe for trade. Having acquainted ſome of the Engliſh ſupercargoes with theſe circumſtances, I deſired them to recommend me to ſome Chineſe merchant of credit, who would offer me a fair price. Having laid my goods before him, he examined them with great care, and told me that he could not venture to offer more than three hundred dollars for them. As I knew from the price our ſkins had ſold for in Kamtſchatka, that he had not offered me one half their value, I found myſelf under the neceſſity of driving a bargain. In my turn, I

therefore demanded one thouſand; my Chineſe then advanced to five hundred; then offered me a private preſent of tea and porcelain, amounting to one hundred more; then the ſame ſum in money; and laſtly roſe to ſeven hundred dollars, on which I fell to nine hundred. At laſt, being tired of the conteſt, I conſented to and received eight hundred.

During my ſtay at Canton, I was carried by one of the Engliſh gentlemen to viſit a perſon of the firſt conſequence in the place. We were received in a long room or gallery, at the upper end of which ſtood a table with a large chair behind it, and a row of chairs extending from it on each ſide down the room. Being previouſly inſtructed that the point of civility conſiſted in remaining as long unſeated as poſſible, I readily acquitted myſelf of this piece of etiquette; after which we were entertained with tea, and ſome preſerved and freſh fruits. Our hoſt was very fat, with a heavy dull countenance, and of great gravity in his deportment. He ſpoke a little broken Engliſh and Portugueſe; and, after we had taken our refreſhment, he carried us about his houſe and garden, and, having ſhewed us all the improvements he was making, we departed.

In the evening of the 26th, I took my leave of the ſupercargoes, having thanked them for their many obliging favours; amongſt which I muſt not forget to mention a handſome preſent of tea for the uſe of the ſhips' companies, and a large collection of Engliſh periodical publications. The latter we found a valuable acquiſition, as they both ſerved to amuſe our impatience during our tedious voyage home, and enabled us to return not total ſtrangers to what had been tranſact-

ing in our native country. At one o'clock the next morning we left Canton, and arrived at Macao about the ſame hour the day following, having paſſed down a channel which lies to the weſtward of that by which we had come up.

During our abſence a briſk trade had been carrying on with the Chineſe for the ſea-otter ſkins, which had every day been riſing in their value. One of our ſeamen ſold his ſtock alone for eight hundred dollars; and a few prime ſkins, which were clean and had been well preſerved, were ſold for one hundred and twenty each. The whole amount of the value in ſpecie and goods that was got for the furs in both ſhips, I am confident did not fall ſhort of two thouſand pounds ſterling; and it was generally ſuppoſed that at leaſt two thirds of the quantity we had originally got from the Americans were ſpoiled and worn out, or had been given away and otherwiſe diſpoſed of in Kamtſchatka.

The rage with which our ſeamen were poſſeſſed to return to Cook's River, and by another cargo of ſkins to make their fortunes at one time, was not far ſhort of mutiny.

The barter which had been carrying on with the Chineſe for our ſea-otter ſkins, had produced a very whimſical change in the dreſs of all our crew. On our arrival here, nothing could exceed the ragged appearance both of the younger officers and ſeamen; for as our voyage had already exceeded, by near a twelvemonth, the time it was at firſt imagined we ſhould remain at ſea, almoſt the whole of our original ſtock of European clothes had been long worn out, or patched up with ſkins, and the various manufactures we had met with in the courſe of our diſcoveries. Theſe

were

were now again mixed and eked out with the gaudieſt ſilks and cottons of China.

On the 12th of January, 1780, at noon, we unmoored and ſcaled the guns, which, on board my ſhip, now amounted to ten; ſo that, by means of four additional ports, we could, if occaſion required, fight ſeven on a ſide.

We thought it our duty to provide ourſelves with theſe means of defence, though we had ſome reaſon to believe, from the public prints, laſt received at Canton, that the generoſity of our enemies had, in a great meaſure, rendered them ſuperfluous. As this intelligence was farther confirmed by the private letters of ſeveral of the ſupercargoes, Captain Gore thought himſelf bound, in return for the liberal exceptions made in our favour, to refrain from availing himſelf of any opportunities of capture, which theſe might afford, and to preſerve throughout his voyage the ſtricteſt neutrality.

At two in the afternoon, on the 13th, having got under ſail, the Reſolution ſaluted the fort of Macao with eleven guns, which was returned with the ſame number.

In the morning of the 20th, we ſteered for Pulo Condore; and at half paſt twelve we got ſight of the iſland. As ſoon as we were come to anchor, Captain Gore fired a gun, with a view of apprizing the natives of our arrival, and drawing them towards the ſhore, but without effect. Early in the morning of the 21ſt, parties were ſent to cut wood, which was Captain Gore's principal motive for coming hither.

None of the natives having yet made their appearance, notwithſtanding a ſecond gun had been fired, Captain Gore thought it adviſable to land,

and

and go in ſearch of them. We proceeded through a thick wood, up a ſteep hill, to the diſtance of a mile, when, after deſcending, we arrived at ſome huts; I ordered the party to ſtay without, leſt the ſight of ſo many armed men ſhould terrify the inhabitants, whilſt I entered and reconnoitred alone. I found in one of the huts an elderly man, who was in a great fright, and preparing to make off with the moſt valuable effects. However, a few ſigns, particularly that moſt ſignificant one of holding out a handful of dollars, and then pointing to a herd of buffaloes, and the fowls that were running about the huts in great numbers, left him without any doubts as to the objects of our viſit. He pointed towards a place where the town ſtood, and made us comprehend that, by going thither, all our wants would be ſupplied. He ordered a young man to conduct us to the town, as ſoon as an obſtacle ſhould be removed, of which we were not aware. On our firſt coming out of the wood, a herd of buffaloes, to the number of twenty at leaſt, came running towards us, toſſing up their heads, ſnuffing the air, and roaring in a hideous manner. They had followed us to the huts, and ſtood drawn up in a body at a little diſtance; and the old man made us underſtand that it would be exceedingly dangerous for us to move till they were driven into the woods; but ſo enraged were the animals grown at the ſight of us, that this was not effected without a good deal of time and difficulty. The men not being able to accompliſh it, we were ſurpriſed to ſee them call to their aſſiſtance a few little boys, who ſoon drove them out of ſight. Afterwards, we had occaſion to obſerve that in driving theſe animals, and ſecuring them, which is done by

putting

putting a rope through a hole which is made in their noſtrils, little boys were always employed, who could ſtroke and handle them with impunity at times when the men durſt not approach them.

We were now conducted to the town, which conſiſts of between twenty and thirty houſes, built cloſe together.

By means of my money, and pointing at different objects in ſight, I had no difficulty in making a man, who ſeemed to be the principal perſon of the company to which we were introduced, comprehend the main buſineſs of our errand; and I as readily underſtood from him that the chief or captain was abſent, but would ſoon return; and that, without his conſent, no purchaſes of any kind could be made.

Having at laſt procured a ſupply of buffaloes and ſome fat hogs, on the 28th of January 1780, we unmoored; and, as ſoon as we were clear of the harbour, ſteered ſouth ſouth-weſt.

On the 2d of February, at eight in the morning, we tried for ſoundings, continuing to do the ſame every hour, till we had paſſed the Straights of Sunda, and found the bottom with twenty-three fathoms of line.

On the 5th we approached the coaſt of Sumatra. The country is covered with wood down to the water's edge, and the ſhores are ſo low, that the ſea overflows the land, and waſhes the trunks of the trees. To this flat and marſhy ſituation of the ſhore, we may attribute thoſe thick fogs and vapours which we perceived every morning, not without dread and horror, hanging over the iſland, till they were diſperſed by the rays of the ſun. The ſhores of Banca, which are oppoſite, are much bolder; and the country inland riſes to a mode-

rate

rate height, and appears to be well wooded throughout.

In the morning of the 9th, I received orders from Captain Gore to make ſail towards a Dutch ſhip, which now hove in ſight to the ſouthward, and which we ſuppoſed to be from Europe; and, according to the nature of the intelligence we could procure from her, either to join him at Cracatoa, where he intended to ſtop, for the purpoſe of ſupplying the ſhips with arrack, or to proceed to the ſouth-eaſt end of Prince's Iſland, and there take in our water and wait for him.

I accordingly bore down towards the Dutch ſhip, which ſoon after came to an anchor to the eaſtward; and having got as near her as the tide would permit, we alſo dropt anchor.

Next morning Mr. Williamſon got on board the ſhip, and learnt that ſhe had been ſeven months from Europe, and three from the Cape of Good Hope; that, before ſhe ſailed, France and Spain had declared war againſt Great Britain; and that ſhe left Sir Edward Hughes, with a ſquadron of men of war and a fleet of Eaſt-India ſhips at the Cape. I immediately ſent a boat to acquaint Captain Gore with the intelligence we had received.

At three o'clock in the morning of the 12th, we ſtood over for Prince's Iſland, and came to an anchor within half a mile of the ſhore. Lieutenant Lanyan, who had been here before with Captain Cook in the year 1770, was ſent along with the maſter to look for the watering-place.

The natives, who came to us ſoon after we anchored, brought a plentiful ſupply of large fowls, and ſome turtles; but the laſt, for the moſt part, were very ſmall.

On the 19th, being favoured by a breeze from the north-weſt, we broke ground, and the next day had entirely loſt ſight of this place.

Of this iſland I ſhall only obſerve, that we were exceedingly ſtruck with the great general reſemblance of the natives, both in figure, colour, manners, and even language, to the nations we had been ſo much converſant with in the South Seas.

From the time of our entering theſe Straights, we began to experience the powerful effects of this peſtilential climate. Two of our people fell dangerouſly ill of malignant putrid fevers; which however we prevented from ſpreading, by putting the patients apart from the reſt in the moſt airy births; and we had the ſingular ſatisfaction of eſcaping from theſe fatal ſeas, without the loſs of a ſingle life; probably owing to the vigorous health of the crews, and the ſtrict attention now become habitual in our men, to the ſalutary regulations introduced amongſt us by Captain Cook.

It had hitherto been Captain Gore's intention to proceed directly to St. Helena, without ſtopping at the Cape, but the rudder of the Reſolution having been reported to be in a dangerous ſtate, he reſolved to ſteer immediately for the Cape, as the moſt eligible place both for the recovery of the ſick, and for the repair of the rudder.

In the forenoon of the 10th of April, a ſnow was ſeen bearing down to us, which proved to be an Engliſh Eaſt-India packet, that had left Table Bay three days before, and was cruiſing with orders for the China fleet, and other India ſhips.

The next morning we ſtood into Simon's Bay. We found lying here the Naſſau and Southampton Eaſt Indiamen, waiting for convoy for Europe.

The

The Reſolution ſaluted the fort with eleven guns, and the ſame number was returned.

Mr. Brandt, the governor of this place, came to viſit us as ſoon as we had anchored. He appeared much ſurpriſed to ſee our crew in ſo healthy a condition, as the Dutch ſhip, that had left Macao on our arrival there, and had touched at the Cape ſome time before, reported that we were in a moſt wretched ſtate, having only fourteen hands left on board the Reſolution, and ſeven on board the Diſcovery. It is not eaſy to conceive the motive theſe people could have had for propagating ſo wanton and malicious a falſehood.

On the 15th, I accompanied Captain Gore to Cape Town; and the next morning we waited on Baron Pletenberg, the governor, by whom we were received with every poſſible attention and civility. Both he and Mr. Brandt had conceived a great perſonal affection for Captain Cook, as well as the higheſt admiration of his character, and heard the recital of his misfortune with many expreſſions of unaffected ſorrow.

During our ſtay at the Cape we met with every proof of the moſt friendly diſpoſition towards us, both in the governor and principal perſons of the place, as well Africans as Europeans.

Having completed our victualling, and furniſhed ourſelves with the neceſſary ſupply of naval ſtores, we ſailed out of the bay on the 9th of May.

On the 12th of June, we paſſed the equator for the fourth time during this voyage.

On the 12th of Auguſt, we made the weſtern coaſt of Ireland; and, after a fruitleſs attempt to get into Port Galway, from whence it was Captain Gore's intention to have ſent the journals and maps of our voyage to London, we were obliged,

by ſtrong ſoutherly winds, to ſteer to the northward. On the 22d of Auguſt, at eleven in the morning, both ſhips came to an anchor at Stromneſs; and on the 4th day of October the ſhips arrived ſafe at the Nore, after an abſence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days.

In the courſe of our voyage, the Reſolution loſt but five men by ſickneſs, three of whom were in a precarious ſtate of health at our departure from England; the Diſcovery did not loſe a man. An unremitting attention to the regulations eſtabliſhed by Captain Cook, with which the world is already acquainted, may be juſtly conſidered as the principal cauſe, under the bleſſing of Divine Providence, of this ſingular ſucceſs.

Thus ended a voyage, diſtinguiſhed by the extent and importance of its diſcoveries. Beſides other inferior iſlands, it added that fine group, called the Sandwich Iſlands, to the former known limits of the terraqueous globe; it aſcertained the proximity of the two continents of Aſia and America; and demonſtrated the impracticability of a paſſage between them, either by an eaſtern or a weſtern courſe.

This enterpriſe proved fatal to its principal conductors. Captains Cook and Clerke, as we have ſeen, never returned. Captain King, with a conſtitution broken by climate and fatigue, lived indeed to publiſh the voyage, which will immortalize his name; but he ſoon after fell a martyr to what he had undergone in the ſervice of his country. He died at Nice, whither he had retired for the mild ſalubrity of the air, in the autumn of 1784; and though cut off in the bloom

of

of life, left a name covered with honour and remembered with regret. He was the fourth ſon of the Dean of Raphoe in Ireland; but of an Engliſh family.

Having come to a concluſion of the voyages, in which the genius and talents of that great navigator, Captain Cook, are ſo pre-eminently diſplayed, we cannot omit the opportunity of gratifying a propenſity which our readers muſt naturally feel, of being made acquainted with what family he left behind him, and how the diſpenſations of Providence may have diſpoſed of them; but in doing this, ſorry are we to ſay, that we impoſe on ourſelves a very painful duty, for we are unfortunately compelled to relate a tale of woe, melancholy and diſtreſſing in the extreme.

When he ſet out on his laſt voyage, Captain Cook's family conſiſted of his wife and three ſons, the ſecond of whom was loſt on board the Thunderer man of war, about ſix months after the unfortunate death of his father. The eldeſt ſon, who was appointed maſter and commander of the Spitfire ſloop of war, while ſhe lay off Poole, waiting for hands, in attempting to get on board, was driven to ſea in a boat, during the night, in a heavy gale of wind, and he and every perſon in the boat periſhed. But what conſiderably aggravates this misfortune is, as was afterwards diſcloſed by one of the ſailors on board the veſſel, that, in their diſtreſs, they were met by a revenue cutter, the hands of which threw them a rope, and lay to, till they could bale their boat, or the fury of the wind ſhould ceaſe. But the maſter of the cutter, who was then in bed, was no ſooner made acquainted with theſe circumſtances,

ſtances, and that it was a king's boat, than, with an oath, he ordered his men immediately to ſet them adrift; and, in that ſituation, they were left to be overwhelmed by a tempeſtuous ſea.

His body was afterwards found, and conveyed to Spithead on board his own veſſel, whence it was conveyed to Cambridge, and buried by the ſide of the youngeſt brother, who had ſuddenly died of a fever, and whoſe funeral he had attended only about ſix weeks before.

Thus was a tender mother prematurely deprived of her huſband and children, and left to mourn their untimely fates, which had ſo powerful an effect upon her mind, as to reduce Mrs. Cook to a mere ſhadow of what ſhe was formerly. At the time we write, ſhe is ſtill alive, and reſides in the vicinity of London, in genteel circumſtances, though far from having recovered her wonted vigour of conſtitution, or her long-loſt peace of mind.

END OF VOL. VII.

Bayerische Staatsbibliothek München

BSB Bayerische StaatsBibliothek
MDZ Münchener DigitalisierungsZentrum Digitale Bibliothek

Mavor, William Fordyce, 1758-1837

Historical Account Of The Most Celebrated Voyages, Travels, And Discoveries From The Time Of Columbus To The Present Period

Bd.: 7

London (1796)
It.coll. 52 m-7
urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10465587-8